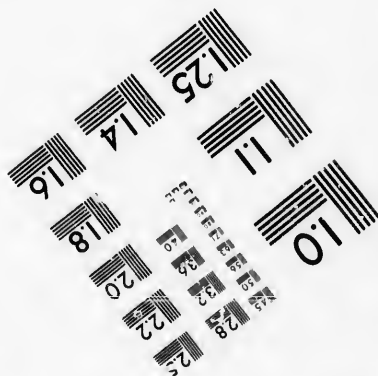
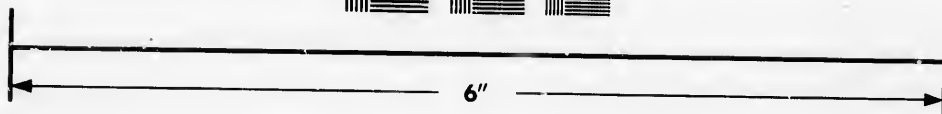
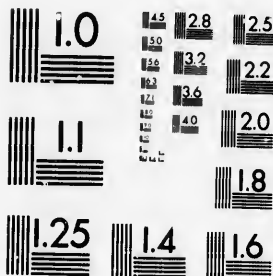


**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH  
Microfiche  
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH  
Collection de  
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

**© 1986**

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured covers/<br>Couverture de couleur   | <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured pages/<br>Pages de couleur   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers damaged/<br>Couverture endommagée  | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages damaged/<br>Pages endommagées  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers restored and/or laminated/<br>Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée  | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages restored and/or laminated/<br>Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Cover title missing/<br>Le titre de couverture manque   | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/<br>Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured maps/<br>Cartes géographiques en couleur   | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages detached/<br>Pages détachées  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/<br>Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)   | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Showthrough/<br>Transparence   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured plates and/or illustrations/<br>Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur  | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Quality of print varies/<br>Qualité inégale de l'impression  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Bound with other material/<br>Relié avec d'autres documents   | <input type="checkbox"/> Includes supplementary material/<br>Comprend du matériel supplémentaire   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion<br>along interior margin/<br>La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la<br>distorsion le long de la marge intérieure   | <input type="checkbox"/> Only edition available/<br>Seule édition disponible   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Blank leaves added during restoration may<br>appear within the text. Whenever possible, these<br>have been omitted from filming/<br>Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées<br>lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte,<br>mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont<br>pas été filmées. | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata<br>slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to<br>ensure the best possible image/<br>Les pages totalement ou partiellement<br>obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure,<br>etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à<br>obtenir la meilleure image possible. |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Additional comments:/<br>Commentaires supplémentaires:  |  |

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/  
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	12X	14X	16X	18X	20X	22X	24X	26X	28X	30X	32X
			✓								

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

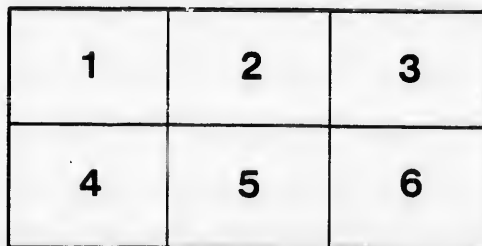
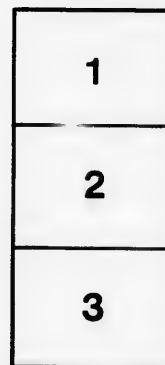
McLennan Library  
McGill University  
Montreal

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol  $\rightarrow$  (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol  $\nabla$  (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

McLennan Library  
McGill University  
Montreal

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole  $\rightarrow$  signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole  $\nabla$  signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.



DICOVERIES OF THE  
English French and Dutch,

IN

A M E R I C A :

WITH

SIR FRANCIS DRAKES, SCHOUTEN  
and LE MAIRE's,

Voyage Round the World.

IN TWO VOLS.

Embellished with CUTS.

---

V O L II.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. NEWBERY, MDCCLXXXVI.

E

*The*  
*a*  
*2*  
*a*  
*t*

**T**  
ing  
Bay  
upon  
and  
some  
da, v  
to th  
never

THE  
DISCOVERIES  
OF THE  
ENGLISH IN AMERICA.

---

CHAP. XXII.

*The history of the settlements of the Hudson's Bay company. An account of the several factories. The religion, manners and customs of the Indians, and of their plants and animals, particularly of the Beaver.*

THE next corporation formed for enlarging our commerce, was that of the Hudson's Bay company, erected by king Charles the II. upon the following occasion: Messrs. Radison and Gooselier, two Frenchmen, meeting with some Indians in the lake of Assiniponals in Canada, were informed that they might go by land to the bottom of the bay, where the English had never yet been; whereupon they desired them to  
B  
conduct



## 2 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

conduct them thither, which the Indians did; after this the two Frenchmen returned to the upper lake, the same way they came, and thence to Quebec, the capital of Canada; where they offered the principal merchants to conduct ships to Hudson's Bay, but their project was rejected; they therefore went to France in hopes of a more favourable hearing at court; but after presenting several memorials, and spending much time and money, their project was considered as chimerical, and they were answered in the same manner as at Quebec. Mean while the English ambassador at Paris, hearing of their proposals, imagined he should do a piece of service to his country by engaging them to serve the English, who had already pretensions to the bay; he therefore persuaded them to go to London, where they met with a favourable reception, from some persons of quality, merchants and others, who employed Mr. Gillam, a person long used to the New-England trade, to perfect this discovery.

He sailed in the *Nonfuch* ketch in the year 1677, into *Baffin's Bay*, to the height of  $75^{\circ}$ . and from thence southward to  $51^{\circ}$ . where he entered a river, to which he gave the name of *Prince Rupert's river*, and finding the natives disposed to a friendly commerce, he erected a small fortress, which he stiled *Charles-Fort*. The success of this expedition was so remarkable that the persons concerned in fitting out this vessel, upon the return of Mr. Gillam, applied to king *Charles II.* for a patent, who granted them one, dated the second of May 1670.

Hudson's

ndians did ;  
 l to the up-  
 d thence to  
 ere they of-  
 uct ships to  
 s rejected ;  
 s of a more  
 r presenting  
 h time and  
 as chimeri-  
 me manner  
 lish embaf-  
 ofals, ima-  
 o his coun-  
 glish, who  
 ne therefore  
 where they  
 some per-  
 , who em-  
 used to the  
 iscovery.

n the year  
 ght of 75°.  
 here be en-  
 e name of  
 natives dis-  
 fted a small

The fac-  
 kable that  
 this vessel,  
 ied to king  
 l them one,

Hudson's

Hudson's Bay is situated from 51 to 64 degrees north latitude, and is 600 miles in length ; and the mouth of the streights, which are six leagues over, lies in about 61°, north latitude. The two opposite shores are called the East-Main and West-Main : the former is also termed Labrador, and the latter New South Wales.

The company had their first fort on Rupert's River, but never had any towns there ; they live within their forts in little houses and huts, in which the builders consider nothing but how to defend them from the cold and rain ; they are however not so much disturbed by the latter as by the former. In 1670, another factory was established at Fort Nelson. Mean while the company, by their governors and agents, made such contracts with the captains or kings of rivers or territories, for enjoying an exclusive trade, that the Indians could not pretend they had encroached upon them. These contracts were as firm as the Indians themselves could make them, and were confirmed by such ceremonies, as they thought most sacred and obligatory.

In the year 1686, the company were in possession of five settlements, viz. Albany River, Haye's Island, Rupert's River, Fort Nelson, and New Severn ; and their trade at each of them was very considerable. From Albany River they had generally 3500 beavers a year, and their commerce increased so much, that the French began to be afraid, that all the Upland Indians would be drawn down to the bay. But being sensible they could do any thing with James II. king of England, they resolved to drive the English out of all their places in the bottom of the bay. First they took Haye's-island, and then the fort

#### 4 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

on Rupert's River; after which the French company at Canada, procured a detachment of soldiers to be sent under the Chevalier de Troyes, who marched over land from Quebec, and in a time of profound peace, laid siege to the fort at Albany River; but though the governor did all in his power to defend the place, he was obliged to surrender it in a week's time. However about seven years after, the company being assisted by the government, retook all the forts and factories of which the French had deprived them in time of peace; but they were soon after driven out of them again by the French.

In 1696 the company applied themselves to king William, representing their inability to maintain themselves against the French, and praying the assistance of the crown for their support; upon which two men of war were sent under the command of captain Allen, who coming into Hays River, summoned all the forts to surrender; when the French governor, finding he could not defend them against the English, capitulated, and the French were allowed to march out with all military honours. However, in the next general war the French renewed their attacks upon the settlements of the Hudson's Bay company, with such success, that they left them only Fort Albany; but by the treaty of Utrecht, every thing was restored to the company again, and an equitable satisfaction stipulated for their losses: Since which time, their trade has greatly increased, so that it became at least treble to what it was when that peace was concluded, and

French com-  
ment of fol-  
r de Troyes,  
ec, and in a  
to the fort at  
ernor did all  
e was oblig-  
e. However  
ny being af-  
the forts and  
eprived them  
on after dri-

hemselfes to  
inability to  
rench, and  
or their sup-  
ere sent un-  
who com-  
the forts to  
nor, finding  
English, ca-  
ed to march  
ever, in the  
ed their at-  
udson's Bay  
y left them  
of Utrechr,  
any again,  
ed for their  
has greatly  
t treble to  
luded, and

is still in a very flourishing condition; they hav-  
ing besides the above, York Fort, Churchill, and  
Moose River factories.

As to the situation of the country about these  
forts: Moose River factory is in latitude  $51^{\circ}$ . 28.  
and is built near the mouth of the river, which  
at twelve miles distance from the fort, is divided  
into two branches, one comes from the south-  
ward, and the other from the southwest. Upon  
the southern branch all sorts of grain thrive, as  
barley, pease and beans do at the factory, though  
exposed to all the chilling winds, that blow from  
the ice in the bay. Upon the southern part above  
the falls, there grow along the river wild oats  
and rye, which have black husks, though the  
grain is perfectly clear, and white like rice, and  
as it grows in the water, the Indians beat it off  
when ripe, into their canoes, as they pass along  
the river. In the woods at the bottom of the bay,  
at Moose, Albany, and Rupert's River, are very  
large timber trees of all kinds; as oak, ash, &c.  
as well as pines, cedars, and spruce. They have  
good grafs for making hay, and may have every  
where within land, all sorts of pulse and grain,  
and the same sort of fruit trees, that are natural  
to the same climate in Europe; for all the sorts  
they have tried, thrive very well.

The ice breaks up at Moose factory in the be-  
ginning of April, but higher up in the country,  
in March. The river is navigable for canoes a  
great way up among the falls; at a considerable  
distance there is one fall of 50 feet, but above  
that the river is deep, and navigable for a great  
way,

6 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

way, where the climate is very good. The French have a settlement for trade near the southern branch, about 100 miles above the factory, where they sell their goods cheaper than the company, notwithstanding the difficulty and expence of carrying them so far from Canada, and give as much for a martin's skin as they do for a beaver, when we insist upon three for one; by which means the French get all the choice skins, and leave only the refuse for the company. The French have also another house pretty high up Rupert's River, by which they have gained all the trade upon the East-Main, except a little the company get at Slude River.

Though the bottom of the bay is as near the line as London, it being in  $51^{\circ}$ . yet the air is excessively cold for nine months in the year, and the other three months very hot. However some fruits, as goose-berries, straw-berries, and dew-berries, grow about Prince Rupert's River, where the commodities for trade are guns, powder, shot, cloth, hatchets, kettles, tobacco, &c. which the English exchange with the Indians for furs, as beavers, martins, foxes, moose, and other skins.

The Indians have no beavers to the northward of Churchill River, on account of there being no ponds or woods, proper for those animals; but they have a great number of martins, bears, reindeer, buffaloes, wolves, and other beasts with rich furs, the country being mostly rocky and covered with white moss. There is a great deal of small wood near the factory, but the wood improves,

good. The  
near the fou-  
the factory,  
ber than the  
ulty and ex-  
Canada, and  
they do for a  
for one; by  
choice skins,  
pany. The  
tty high up  
gained all  
a little the

as near the  
e air is ex-  
ar, and the  
ever some  
and dew-  
ver, where  
s, powder,  
&c. which  
ns for furs,  
and other

northward  
e being no  
imals; but  
ears, rein-  
asts with  
y and co-  
eat deal of  
wood im-  
proves,

proves, further up the river from the bay, where they have juniper birch and poplar, and still more southerly the timber is larger, and there is a great variety of trees.

Mr. Dobbs observes, that " The company avoid all they can making discoveries to the northward of Churchill, or extending their trade that way, for fear they should discover a passage to the western ocean of America, and tempt, by that means, the rest of the English merchants to lay open their trade, which they know they have no legal right to; which, if the passage was found, would not only animate the rest of the merchants to pursue the trade through that passage, but also to find out the great advantages that might be made of the trade of the rivers and countries adjoining to the bay, by which means they would lose their beloved monopoly. But the prospect they have of gain to be made by trading with the Eskimaux Indians, for whalefin, whale and seal oil, and sea-horse teeth, induces them to venture a sloop annually, as far as 62<sup>o</sup>. 30. to Whale-Cove, where these Indians meet them, and truck their fins and oil with them."

The Indians of certain districts, bounded by particular rivers, have each of them what they call an Okimah or captain, who is an old man, esteemed only for his prudence and experience. His authority is only what they please to give him upon particular occasions. He is their orator, when they address the English, and speaks

8 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

for them in their own councils, when they assemble every spring, to settle their quarters for hunting, fowling, and fishing. They have but few religious sentiments. They maintain that there are two monotoes or spirits, one who sends all good things, and the other all the bad. Their worship consists in songs and dances at their feasts, in honour of the monotoes who have favoured them; but if they are sick, or almost famished for want of provisions, they hang some little bauble, which they esteem, upon the top of a pole near the tent, to pacify the offended spirit. As they live a rambling life, they can receive no benefit from tame fowl or cattle, for they seldom stay above a fortnight at a place, unless they find plenty of game. On their removal they build their huts, and then disperse to get game for their food, returning at night, after having killed enough to support them for a day. But in these excursions they do not proceed above a league or two from their huts. When they find scarcity of game they remove a league or two farther, and thus traverse through these countries and bogs, scarce missing one day in winter or summer, whether the weather be fair or foul, and going in the greatest storms of snow. The smaller game got by traps or snares are generally the employment of women and children, as martins, squirrels, ermines, &c. while the elks, or moose-deer, stags, bears, tygers, wild beeves, wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, corcajons, &c. are the employment of the men. But when the Indians kill any game for food, they leave

When they af-  
quarters for  
they have but  
maintain that  
one who sends  
bad. Their  
nces at their  
who have fa-  
or almost fa-  
y hang some  
upon the top  
the offended  
they can re-  
or cattle, for  
t at a place,  
On their re-  
then disperse  
ing at night,  
rt them for a  
do not pro-  
their huts,  
ey remove a  
erfe through  
sing one day  
weather be  
est storms of  
ps or snares  
women and  
s, &c. while  
ars, tygers,  
otters, cor-  
men. But  
food, they  
leave

leave it upon the spot, and the next day send their wives to fetch it home; directing them to the place, by breaking off branches from the trees, and laying them in the road, pointing to the place where they should go, and sometimes they scatter moss, so that they never miss finding it. It is observable that the trees all bend towards the south, and that the branches on that side are larger and stronger than those of the north side, and that this is also the case with respect to the moss that grows upon the trees.

When they go abroad in winter to hunt and shoot for their daily food, before they dress, they rub themselves all over with bear's grease, or oil of beavers, which does not freeze. They also grease the fur of their beaver coats, and then put them on. They have a kind of boots or stockings made of beaver skin, well oiled with the fur inwards, and above them they have an oil-skin laced about their feet, which keeps out the cold and water, where there is neither ice nor snow; and by this means they never freeze or suffer by the cold. In summer when they go naked, they also rub themselves with oil or grease, which keeping their skins soft and supple, prevents their being scorched by exposing themselves to the sun, and hinders their being molested by the flies, bugs, mosquitoes, or any other noxious insect. When they want to get rid of it, they go into the water, and rub themselves all over with mud or clay, then letting it dry upon them, they rub it off, but whenever they are free from the oil, the flies and mosquitoes immediately attack them.



10 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

They use no milk from the time they are weaned, and have an aversion to cheese, from the opinion that it is made of dead men's fat. They love prunes and raisins, and will give a beaver's skin for twelve of them, to carry to their children; they will give the same for a Jew's harp, or for the smallest print or picture, and all toys are considered by them as jewels.

The carcajons and otters prey upon the beavers when they can take them at an advantage. The former is as big as a very large dog, and has a good fur, which in exchange is valued at a beaver and a half.

A large beaver, or castor, is about 26 inches long from the hind part of the head to the root of the tail, and is about three feet eight inches round. Its head is about seven inches long and six broad, and its tail, which is somewhat of an oval form, and covered with scales, is fourteen inches long and six broad. Its ears are short and round; its eyes are small, and it has two fore teeth in each jaw, about an inch long, which are extremely sharp and strong. Though its legs are but five inches long, its feet are above six inches in length, and its paws formed like a man's hand; but the toes of the hind feet are joined like those of a duck, with a membrane of a slate colour. It makes use of its paw in feeding as apes do, and in building its house.

The ancient writers of natural history are mistaken in asserting that the beavers bite off their testicles, when pursued by the huntsmen; for what the physicians call castoreum, is inguinal and glands of this animal. Besides, the beavers  
are

# GLISH

time they are  
neese, from the  
n's fat. They  
give a beaver's  
to their chil-  
a Jew's harp,  
, and all toys

upon the bea-  
an advantage.  
dog, and has  
s valued at a

out 26 inches  
ad to the root  
eight inches  
ches long and  
newhat of an  
s, is fourteen  
are short and  
has two fore  
g, which are  
ough its legs  
re above six  
ormed like a  
hind feet are  
membrane of  
aw in feeding

tory are mis-  
bite off their  
ntsmen; for  
is inguinal  
the beavers  
are



*Beavers Building their Dams.* J. Lodge Sculp

P. II.



*J. B. S. P.  
Nutt's.*

are never pursued in hunting; for as they seldom leave the side of the pond where they have built their kennels, upon the least noise they dive under water, and return to their little houses when the danger is over.

The beavers are of three colours, some of a reddish brown, others black, and others white. Those of each pond are represented by several authors, as forming a commonwealth; as having an excellent polity and laws, and as holding frequent consultations for their mutual defence: but it is probable these things are greatly exaggerated: however, their sagacity is universally allowed to be very extraordinary, and the manner of building their houses or kennels has been always a subject of admiration to the curious.

The beavers finding a rivulet that runs a-cross a low ground, make banks that stop the course of the water, and cause an inundation that is sometimes six miles in circumference. This bank is made with trees, which they cut down with their teeth, and then drag them along as they swim in the water. The trees being ranged along the bottom of the low ground, these animals load themselves with grass and earth, which they drag along upon their great tails, and throw in between the food with such art and industry, that it would be very difficult, if not impossible, for man to make a stronger wall with such materials. Their tails serve them both for carts and trowels, and their teeth for axes; their paws supply the place of hands, and their feet serve instead of oars. In short, in the space of five or six months, about an hundred of these animals

12 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

will make banks of 4 or 500 paces in length, of 20 in height, and seven or eight in thickness. The pond being compleated, they build their houses near the center, by making holes at the bottom of the water, for planting six posts, upon which each of their edifices is built in a most curious manner, with branches of trees, herbs, and earth. Some say they have three stories, that they may mount up from one to the other, when the waters rise by rains or thaw; and that each beaver has an apartment to himself which he enters under water thro' a great hole in the first floor, that has a communication with the two other rooms; but this is not true.

The chief food of the beavers is the poplar, but they also eat fallows, alders, and most other trees that have not a resinous juice, feeding on the middle bark. In May when wood is not plenty, they live upon a large root, a fathom long, which grows in the marshes, and is as thick as a man's leg, but at this time the beavers are not so good eating as when they feed upon barks. They will cut down trees with their teeth, that are extremely thick, and when one of them observes that the tree is ready to fall, he gives a loud cry and runs the contrary way, and is followed by the rest. They then cut off all the twigs and smaller branches, two or three fathoms in length, and draw them to their houses in the ponds, and having repaired their pond-head, they thrust one end of these sticks into the clay or mud, that they may lie under water all the winter, to preserve the bark green and tender for their winter provisions. In this manner they serve

s in length, of  
t in thickness,  
ey build their  
g holes at the  
ix posts, upon  
in a most cu-  
es, herbs, and  
e stories, that  
e other, when  
nd that each  
which he en-  
de in the first  
with the two

s the poplar  
nd most other  
e, feeding on  
wood is not  
ot, a fathom  
es, and is as  
e the beavers  
y feed upon  
s with their  
when one of  
y to fall, he  
ry way, and  
n cut off all  
o or three fa-  
their houses  
their pond  
icks into the  
er water all  
a and tender  
anner they  
serve

serve both the smaller and larger branches, till they come to the trunk of the tree.

The beavers are excellent food, but the tongue and tail are the most delicious parts. They bring forth their young in the beginning of the summer, when the females are lean by suckling them, the males are also lean all the summer, during which they are employed in repairing their ponds and houses, and in cutting down and providing wood and branches for their winter store, but they are very fat, from November till the end of March. They breed once in a year, and have from ten to fifteen at a litter, which grow up in one season; they therefore multiply very fast, whence if the Indians empty a pond, and take the whole lodge, they generally leave a pair to breed, by which it is again fully stocked in two or three years time. A good hunter among the Indians can kill 600 beavers in a season, but their canoes are so small that they can bring only 100. They therefore sometimes burn off the fur and roast the beavers like pigs.

The ounce is of the cat kind, but as large as a great dog; it preys upon all the beasts it can conquer, as does also the tyger, which is the only beast in that country that will not fly from a man. The beeves have a large bunch upon their backs, which is by far the most delicious part of them, it being juicy, rich, and as sweet as marrow, though it weighs several pounds. They are covered with exceeding good hair, almost as fine as silk, and one of their fleeces will weigh at least eight pounds.

## C H A P. XXIII.

*An account of the settlement of Pennsylvania. That fine country described, with some account of its rivers, climate, and produce. Of the principal towns, and particularly Philadelphia; the articles of commerce, and the number of the people.*

**T**HE next colony that was settled in America, was that of Pennsylvania, the best projected, and till very lately the most flourishing of our colonies in North America. Admiral Penn, who in conjunction with col. Venables, conquered the island of Jamaica, and was afterwards knighted, being in high credit with king Charles II. and the duke of York, had the promise of a grant of this country from that king, as a reward for his past services, and some years after his death, his son strenuously solicited the promised grant; which, as the king owed considerable sums to his father, he obtained in the year 1679, and the original patent was dated the 4th of March 1680. Mr. Penn afterwards obtained part of Nova Belgia, or the province of New-York, which was added to the country he had acquired by the first grant, and both together, from his own name, he called Pennsylvania, or Penn's Country.

But before we proceed, it may be necessary just to observe, that the Dutch were the first planters here as well as at New-York, and living near the bay in the neighbourhood of that province,

*Pennsylvania. That  
the account of its  
of the principal  
phia; the arti-  
of the people.*

settled in Ame-  
the best project-  
enriching of our  
Colonial Penn, who  
conquered the  
wards knighted,  
Charles II. and  
of a grant of  
reward for his  
his death, his  
granted grant;  
able sums to  
1679, and the  
March 1680.  
of Nova Bel-  
t, which was  
ed by the first  
own name, he  
ry.  
be necessary  
ere the first  
, and living  
of that pro-  
vince,

vince, applied themselves chiefly to trade. Af-  
terwards some of the inhabitants of Finland, set-  
tled near the Freshes of Delawar, \* where they  
applied themselves to husbandry, and had a go-  
vernor appointed them by their own sovereign  
the king of Sweden. But between these two  
neighbours there happened frequent disputes, till  
the Dutch growing too powerful for the Swedes,  
the latter submitted to their stronger neighbours,  
and the Swedish governor made a formal surren-  
der of the country to the governor for the States  
General; after which this province continued  
subject to that republic, till the English drove the  
Dutch out of New York, which rendered the  
possession of those territories the more easy to Mr.  
Penn.

Before Mr. Penn sent over the first adventurers  
under his patent, there were a few English in  
Pennsylvania, over whom he placed as governor  
col. William Markham, his nephew, to whom  
both the Swedes and Dutch submitted. Mr. Penn  
had the more earnestly solicited the above grant,  
on account of the persecution of the dissenters,  
and particularly on his finding his friends the  
quakers harrassed all over England by the spiri-  
tual courts, he himself being many times thrown  
in prison, not only for preaching, but merely for  
being present at their assemblies: he therefore  
resolved to put himself at the head of as many,  
as

\* The river Delawar above and below the  
falls is for a considerable length called the Fresh-  
es, and near the mouth are marshes, which are  
extremely fertile.



as would go with him, and remove to this country, but first sent over a body of settlers, from London, Liverpool, and Bristol, who purchased considerable quantities of land, at the rate of 20l. for a thousand acres, and paying a small quit-rent. The male and female servants were to have 50 acres when their time was out, and the owners of land 30 acres a head for such servants. In order to secure the new planters from the Indians, he appointed commissioners to confer with them about the land, and to confirm a league of peace: by these first adventurers, he also sent a very affectionate and friendly letter to the native Indians, and the same year went to Pennsylvania himself, taking with him a great number of people, who with those that immediately followed him, amounted to 2000 persons.

As soon as he arrived, he took the government into his own hands, entered into a treaty of peace with the Indian kings, and instead of taking advantage of his patent, purchased of them the lands he had obtained by his grant. He then settled the constitution and laws of the country, by the consent of the inhabitants, by whom it was unanimously agreed, according to the fundamental constitution of Pennsylvania, which he himself had drawn up, and published in England, that all persons who acknowledged the existence of God, should enjoy free liberty of conscience; and have the full enjoyment of civil liberty, and that no laws should be made there, nor money raised, but by the consent of the inhabitants; who were also allowed to enact what

laws

ve to this coun-  
 f settlers, from  
 who purchased  
 at the rate of  
 paying a small  
 servants were  
 was out, and  
 d for such ser-  
 y planters from  
 sioners to con-  
 l to confirm a  
 dventurers, he  
 endly letter to  
 year went to  
 a him a great  
 that immedi-  
 000 persons:  
 e government  
 reaty of peace  
 of taking ad-  
 of them the  
 nt. He then  
 the country,  
 by whom it  
 g to the fun-  
 ia, which he  
 hed in Eng-  
 dged the ex-  
 berty of con-  
 nt of civil li-  
 made there,  
 nt of the in-  
 enact what  
 laws

laws they pleased for the prosperity and security of the province. He established courts of justice in every county, with proper officers, to prevent law-suits and contentions; and three peace-makers were chosen by every county-court in the nature of common arbitrators, to hear and put an end to all the differences that arose between man and man; he also ordained that every spring and autumn, an orphans court should be held in each county, to inspect and regulate the affairs of widows and orphans.

Mr. William Penn staid there two years, till he had settled every thing to his own and the people's satisfaction, during which he behaved in such a manner to the Indians, that he inspired them with a most extraordinary love and esteem both for him and his people; so that they still speak of him with the utmost gratitude and affection, and whenever they would express an extraordinary regard for any Englishman, they say we esteem and love you as if you were that good man William Penn himself.

We shall now proceed to a more particular description of this famous settlement, which is divided into three upper and three lower counties: The three upper counties, Buckingham, Philadelphia, and Chester, are the Pennsylvania mentioned in king Charles's grant, and are taken out of Nova Belgia. The upper counties end at Marcus Hook, four miles below Chester Town; the lower run along the coast 120 miles, and are 40 miles deep towards Maryland. Thus the whole province of Pennsylvania, from the Falls Townships, to 20 miles below Hanlope, or Cape-William,

18 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
William, is in length 330 miles, and in breadth  
200.

The chief rivers in Pennsylvania are the Dela-  
war, which rising far north in the country of the  
Iroquois, takes its course to the southward, and  
dividing this province from that of New Jersey,  
falls into the Atlantic ocean between Cape May  
and Cape Hanlope, being navigable for 200  
miles and upwards with large vessels; but has a  
Cataract above Bristol, that renders the naviga-  
tion impracticable to the northward of the county  
of Bucks. The second river is that of Susqua-  
hanah, which also rising in the country of the  
Iroquois, runs south through the middle of Penn-  
sylvania, falls into Chesapeake Bay, and is navi-  
gable for large ships. The third river is School-  
kill, which has likewise its source in the country  
of the Iroquois, and runs south almost parallel to  
the rivers Delawar and Susquahanah, till at  
length turning to the eastward, it falls into the  
Delawar at the city of Philadelphia. This ri-  
ver is also navigable for large ships as far as that  
city, and for boats above 100 miles higher.  
These rivers, and the numerous bays and creeks  
in Delawar bay, capable of containing the larg-  
est fleets, render this county admirably suited to  
carry on a foreign trade.

The air is here sweet and clear; autumn be-  
gins about the 20th of October, and lasts till the  
beginning of December: Frosty weather and  
cold seasons are frequent, and sometimes the ri-  
ver Delawar, notwithstanding its breadth, is fro-  
zen over, but in such seasons the air is dry, clear  
and agreeable: The spring lasts from March to  
June,

and in breadth

are the Dela-  
country of the  
outhward, and  
of New Jersey,  
een Cape May  
able for 200  
els; but has a  
ers the naviga-  
t of the county  
at of Susqua-  
untry of the  
ddle of Penn-  
and is navi-  
ver is School-  
in the country  
ost parallel to  
man, till at  
falls into the  
ia. This ri-

as far as that  
miles higher.  
ys and creeks  
ing the larg-  
bly suited to

autumn be-  
lasts till the  
weather and  
imes the ri-  
adth, is fro-  
s dry, clear  
n March to  
June,

June, during which the weather is more incon-  
stant. In the summer months, July, August  
and September, the heats are extraordinary, but  
they are alleviated by cool breezes; that render  
them very tolerable. During this season the wind  
is south-west, but in spring, autumn and winter,  
it is generally north-west. The earth is fruitful,  
fat, and easy to be cleared, as the roots of the  
trees lie near the surface of the ground.

Philadelphia produces almost all sorts of trees,  
which are different in some respect from the Eu-  
ropean; though they are called oaks, red, white  
and black ash, beech, walnut, Spanish chesnuts,  
cypress, and red and white cedar; but the most  
durable are poplar, gumwood, hickory, and sas-  
saparilla. They have also apples, quinces, pears,  
cherries, mulk-melons, snake-root, sarsaparilla,  
cranberries, salop and spruce, and all sorts of  
corn, as wheat, barley, oats, rye, pease, beans,  
and Indian corn, and particularly hemp and  
flax.

Of the living creatures for food and conveni-  
ence they have moose deer as large as small oxen,  
rabbits, racoons, and beavers, and they have  
now such plenty of horses, cows and sheep, that  
it is common for farmers to have 4 or 500 of the  
latter in a flock. As to fowl they have very fine  
bustards of 40 or 50 pounds weight, pheasants,  
heath birds, partridges, swans, geese, pigeons,  
braindees, ducks, teal, and snipe. The fish are  
sturgeons, herrings, eels, smelts, and perch; the  
latter caught in abundance in Delaware bay, and  
in the river above the Freshes are oysters, crabs,  
cockles, and muscles.

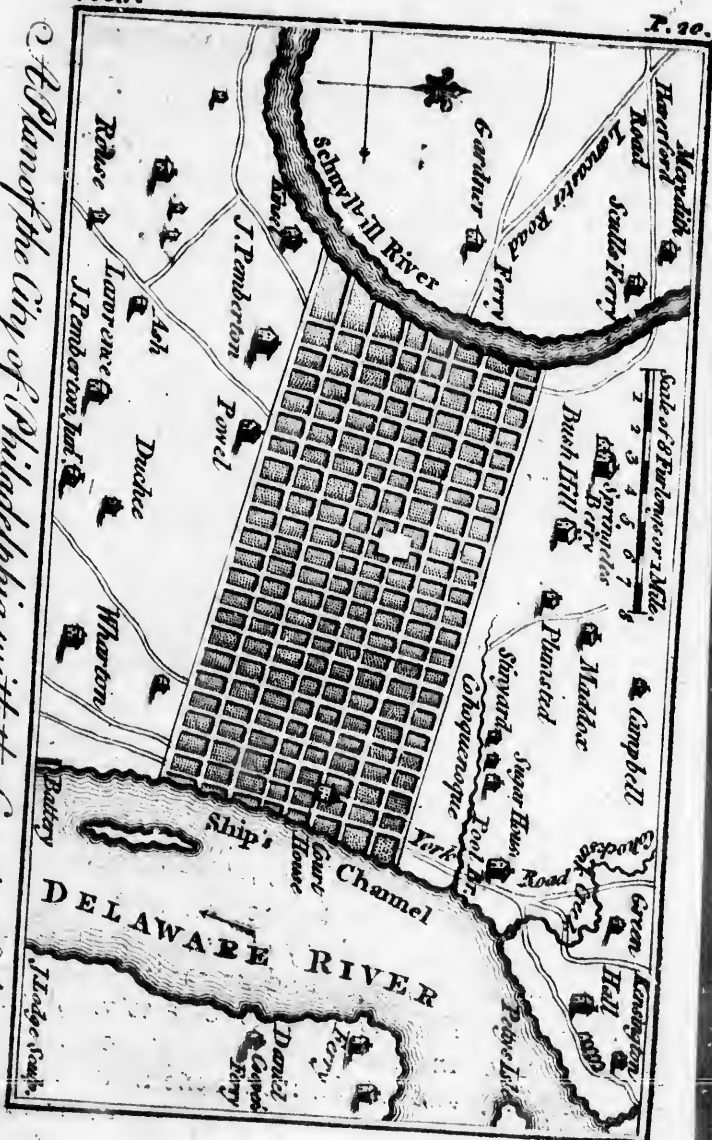
20 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

We need not wonder, that in a country so pleasant and fruitful, and where there was the fairest prospect of living happily, people should resort thither in great numbers, especially as they were to enjoy the most beneficent scheme of government ever devised by man; or that in a short time, many towns should be built, and vast tracts of country scattered over with plantations. The principal of these towns are Bristol, situated on the river Delawar, in the county of Buckingham, the most northerly of any in this province. The town is opposite to Burlington in New Jersey, and 20 miles north of the city of Philadelphia. In this county is the manor house of Pennsbury, a fine edifice, built by Mr. William Penn, the first proprietor, on an eminence which commands the country. In the county of Philadelphia, which lies south of that of Buckingham, is the city of the same name, the capital of Pennsylvania, situated in  $40^{\circ}, 30.$  north latitude, and is built upon one of the finest plans that ever was formed, it being laid out by Mr. Penn himself. It is an oblong of near two miles, extending from the river Delawar almost to the river Schoolkill, the east end fronting the river Delawar, and the west the Schoolkill; each front being a mile in length. Every owner of 1000 acres has his house in one of the two fronts facing the rivers, or in the High-street, running from the middle of one front to the middle of the other; and every owner of 5000 acres has an acre of ground in the front of his house, and the rest half an acre for gardens and court yards. In the center of the town is a square of ten acres, surrounded by the town-house

# ENGLISH

in a country so  
re there was the  
y; people should  
especially as they  
nt scheme of go-  
or that in a short  
t, and vast tracts  
antations. The  
istol, situated on  
of Buckingham,  
province. The  
New Jersey, and  
Philadelphia. In  
of Pennsbury, a  
iam Penn, the  
ich commands  
Philadelphia,  
ingham, is the  
of Pennsylva-  
de, and is built  
er was formed,  
nself. It is an  
g from the ri-  
Schoolkill, the  
and the west  
mile in length.  
s house in one  
r in the High-  
f one front to  
ery owner of  
n the front of  
e for gardens  
he town is a  
y the town-  
house

A Plan of the City of Philadelphia with the Country Adjacent.



house and other public buildings, and in each quarter of the city is a square of eight acres. The High-street which runs the whole length of the city, is 100 feet wide, parallel to which run eight streets, that are crossed by twenty more at right angles, all of them 30 feet wide. Several canals are let into the town from each river, which add to the beauty and conveniency of the place, and there is also a key 200 feet square, to which ships of 4 or 500 tons may come up, with wet and dry docks for building and repairing of ships, besides magazines, warehouses, and all manner of conveniences for importing and exporting merchandize.

The other principal towns in the county of Philadelphia, are Oxford and German town, the last is a thriving populous place, inhabited chiefly by the Germans, who there speak and transact their business in their own language. In this county is also the city Radnor, on the south-west side of Schoolkill river, which is the capital of a large country planted by the Welch. To the south of the county of Philadelphia lies that of Chester; the capital of which is the town of Chester, situated on the river Delawar; and to the southward of Chester lies the town of Chichester; at either of these two last towns are ports sufficient to receive and secure the largest fleets from storms. The county of New Castle, lies south of that of Chester, and its capital is of the same name. This is said to be a town of the briskest trade in the province, next to that of Philadelphia, and has an iron mine in its neighbourhood.





22 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
bourhood. The town of Apoquinemink lies up  
on the river Delawar, south of New Castle  
and is a place of good trade. The county of Kent  
lies south of the last-mentioned county, and Do-  
ver, its chief town, has a very commodious port.  
The most southern county is that of Suffex, the  
capital whereof is Lewis, which has a secure har-  
bour, and carries on a considerable trade.

The commerce of Pennsylvania, with respect  
to Europe and America, consists in their export-  
ing all sorts of grain, as wheat, rye, barley,  
oats, pease, and beans, Indian corn, potashes,  
wax, furs and skins, horses, beef, pork, fish  
salted and barrelled, pipe staves, &c. in return for  
which they import from the islands and other  
places, silver and gold, sugar, rum, molasses,  
salt, wine, &c. and from Great Britain, cloath-  
ing of all kinds, hardware, tools, toys, &c.  
They have also some rice, but no great quanti-  
ties, and a little tobacco of the worst sort. They  
trade with the Indians for the skins and furs of  
wild beasts, who purchase of them in return,  
shirts, blankets, arms, ammunition, rum, and  
other spirits.

As to the number of inhabitants, those of the  
city of Philadelphia alone, were in 1740 compu-  
ted at 15000, and since that time they have been  
prodigiously increased, five or six thousand Ger-  
man protestants having generally been carried  
over every year, and it is computed with all the  
inhabitants together in the whole province of  
Pennsylvania, according to Major Rogers, do  
not amount to less than 350,000.

C H A P.

Quinemink lies up  
of New Castle  
the county of Kent  
county, and Do-  
commodious port  
at of Suffex, the  
has a secure har-  
ble trade.

nia, with respect  
in their export-  
at; rye, barley,  
corn, potashes,  
beef, pork, fish  
&c. in return for  
lands and other  
rum, molasses,  
Britain, cloath-  
ols, toys, &c.

to great quanti-  
port fort. They  
ns and furs of  
em in return,  
on, rum, and

s, those of the  
1740 compu-  
they have been  
thousand Ger-  
been carried  
d with all the  
province of  
Rogers, do

CHAP. XXIV.

*Some account of the motives and the plan for settling the province of Georgia. The first colony sent over under the direction of Mr. Oglethorpe. His proceedings while in the country. He returns to England with several Indian chiefs. The great embarkations made for that colony, and the grants made to enable the Trustees to secure that barrier against the Spaniards and French. Mr. Oglethorpe's proceedings after his going back with supplies, and particularly his taking a journey of 500 miles, to keep the Indians steady to the interest of Great Britain. The number, situation and importance of the Towns and Forts in this province, and a short description of the country.*

**B**EFORE the last war with Spain, some persons of great distinction observing, that considerable numbers of people in these kingdoms were by a variety of misfortunes rendered incapable of subsisting in such a way as to be useful to themselves and the community, formed a design of settling that part of America which properly forms our frontier towards the Spaniards and the French, and which, though within the bounds of the province of Carolina, as described in its charter, was in reality no part of it, as not being at all settled: and that for reason, rather a burden than an advantage to the province to which it belonged. They therefore applied to

the

24 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

the crown for sufficient powers to set this undertaking on foot, and meeting with all the encouragement they could desire or expect, easily obtained a very extensive charter. Their next care was to raise a fund sufficient for sending over a considerable number of people, and providing them with all kinds of necessaries, towards which they subscribed liberally themselves, obtained considerable sums by way of collection, and had also a grant from the parliament of 10,000 l.

In laying the plan for this frontier settlement it was resolved, to consider each settler in a double capacity, as a planter, and as a soldier, and to provide for them arms for their defence, as well as tools for the cultivation of the land, and to have them taught the use of both. It was also resolved, that upon the first settling of this colony, towns should be laid out, and lands allotted each of the men, for their support, as near those towns as possible. It was agreed, that every lot of land should consist of 50 acres, and that it should be granted them in tail male as the properest tenure for the colony in its infancy; and with respect to any hardships that might arise from this tenure, they determined to remedy them occasionally, till such time as the condition of the colony should render an alteration necessary; they also determined to prohibit negroes, the use of them being absolutely inconsistent with the design of forming a frontier colony, and in many respects inconvenient and dangerous.

These dispositions being made, it was resolved to send over 114 persons, men, women, and children,

s to set this under-  
 with all the encou-  
 expect, easily ob-  
 Their next care  
 pr. sending over a  
 e, and providing  
 es, towards which  
 selves, obtained  
 ection, and had  
 of 10,000 l.

ontier settlement  
 settler in a dou-  
 s a foldier, and  
 heir defence, as  
 the land, and  
 oth. It was al-  
 tling of this co-  
 and lands allot-  
 upport, as near  
 reed, that eve-  
 acres, and that  
 ale as the pro-  
 infancy; and  
 at might arise  
 d to remedy  
 the condition  
 ation necessa-  
 t negroes, the  
 stent with the  
 and in many

was resolved  
 women, and  
 children,

children, out of such as were in low circum-  
 stances, and by that means unable to follow any  
 business in England, and who if in debt had leave  
 from their creditors to go; and of such as were  
 recommended by the minister, church-wardens  
 and overseers of their respective parishes, and  
 James Oglethorpe, Esq; one of the trustees, of-  
 fered to go and form the settlement at his own ex-  
 pence.

On the 24th of October 1732, the people were  
 all examined whether any of them had any ob-  
 jections to the terms and conditions proposed,  
 when they declared that they were fully satisfied  
 with them, and executed articles under their  
 hands and seals, testifying their consents thereto:  
 but four of them desiring their daughters might  
 inherit, as well as their sons, and that their wi-  
 dows dower might be considered; the trustees  
 immediately resolved, that every person who  
 should desire the same should have the privilege  
 of naming a successor to the lands granted him;  
 who in case the possessor should die without issue  
 male, should hold the same to them and their  
 heirs for ever; and that the widows should have  
 their thirds as in England. This resolution was  
 immediately communicated to all the people,  
 who now expressed themselves fully satisfied.

The trustees then prepared a form of govern-  
 ment, and established under their seal a court of  
 judicature, for trying causes, as well criminal as  
 civil, in the town of Savannah, the name given  
 to the first town to be raised: they also appointed  
 a bailiff, a recorder, two constables, and two

tything men, out of such of the settlers as appeared most prudent and discreet.

These measures being taken, Mr. Oglethorpe set out for Gravesend on the 15th of November 1732, and from thence sailed for Carolina, where he arrived with the colony on the 15th of January following. They were received at Charleston, by the governor, with great kindness and civility, when Mr. Middleton, the king's pilot, was ordered to steer the ship into Port Royal, and to convey the small craft with the colony from thence to the river Savannah. On the 18th Mr. Oglethorpe went on shore upon French's island and left a guard upon John's, a point of the island which commands the channel, and is about half way between Beaufort and the river Savannah. Mr. Oglethorpe then went to Beaufort Town; where he was saluted with a discharge of the artillery, and had a new barrack fitted up where the colony landed on the 20th, and were cheerfully assisted by the officers and gentlemen of the neighbourhood. From thence he went to view the Savannah river, and having pitched upon a convenient spot of ground ten miles up the town was marked out, and the first house begun on the 9th of February, 1733.

The chief reasons that determined Mr. Oglethorpe in the choice of this place were, health, pleasure, and conveniency. Before his arrival in the country, it had the name of Yamacraw, from an Indian nation who inhabited there, under the command of their chief Tomochichi, who readily gave place to the English, and entered

settlers as appeared into a close friendship with them, which was the more agreeable, as there was no other Indian nation within 50 miles, but Mr. Oglethorpe called the town Savannah, from the name of the river.

While the town was building, Mr. Oglethorpe kept a strict discipline, none of the people were allowed to swear at get drunk; they were debarred the use of spirituous liquors, and instead of rum, had English beer. While this work was going forwards, some of the land was ploughed up, part of which was sowed with wheat. At the same time two or three gardens were sowed with pot-herbs, &c. and several fruit trees planted. The limits of the town were also pallisadoed, and every thing went forwards with the greatest regularity.

Things being in some forwardness, and every man being appointed his proper station and employment, Mr. Oglethorpe set out for Charles-Town, to solicit succours for his colony, where both the assembly and people in general contributed largely to the assistance of the new settlers. Five hundred pounds of this money Mr. Oglethorpe immediately laid out in cattle, and having given directions for providing at Charles-Town what his people might have occasion for, he went back to Savannah.

On his return, he found that the chief men of the Lower Creek Indians were come to treat of an alliance with the new colony. These Lower Creeks are a nation that formerly consisted of ten, but are now reduced to eight tribes, that have

28 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

each a different government, but are allied together and speak the same language. Their claims extended from the Savannah river, as far as St. Augustin and up Flint river, which falls into the bay of Mexico. Tomochichi and the Indians of Yamacraw, were of the same nation.

Mr. Oglethorpe received the Indians in one of the new houses. They consisted of the chiefs and war captains of the several tribes and their attendants, all of whom being seated, Oueekachumpa, a very tall old man, stood up and made a speech, which was interpreted by Mr. Wigan and Mr. Musgrove: He first claimed all the lands to the southward of the river Savannah, as belonging to the Creek Indians, and then added, that though they were but poor and ignorant, he that had given the English breath, had given them breath also, but had bestowed more wisdom on the white men. That they were all persuaded, that the great power who dwelt in heaven and all around; at which he spread out his hands and lengthened the sound of his words; had sent the English thither for the instruction of them, their wives and their children; that therefore they freely gave up to them their right to all the land they did not use themselves. That this was not only his opinion, but the opinion of the eight towns of the Creeks, each of whom having consulted together had sent some of their chief men with skins, which was their wealth. The chief men then brought a bundle of buckskins, and laid eight from the eight towns before Mr. Oglethorpe. He then said that these were the best

it are allied together. Their claims, however, as far as stretch, which falls into the hands of the Indians of the nation.

The Indians in one of the tribes of the chiefs of the tribes and their relations, Oucekechum-pa's, stood up and made a speech by Mr. Wigan, who had named all the lands from Savannah, as being his, and then added, "I am ignorant, he said, that I had given you more wisdom than you were all possessed of. I dwell in heaven, and I spread out his hands of his words; and I give you the instruction of his words; that there is no right to all these things. That this is the opinion of the Indians, from whom having taken the wealth of their chief, I have given you of buckskins, and skins before Mr. Oglethorpe. These were the best

best things they had, and that they gave them with a good heart. He thanked him for his kindness to Tomochichi, to whom he said he was related, who though he had been banished from his nation, was a good man, and had been a great warrior, and that for his wisdom and justice, the banished men had chosen him, Mico or king. He concluded with saying, that he had heard the Cherokees had killed some Englishmen, and that if Mr. Oglethorpe would command them, they would enter with their whole force into the Cherokee country, destroy their harvest, kill the people, and revenge the English.

When he had done speaking, Tomochichi came in with the Yamacraw Indians, and making a low obeisance said, "I was a banished man, and came here poor and helpless, to look for good land near the tombs of my ancestors; and when you the English came to this place, I feared you would drive us away; for we were weak and wanted corn: But you confirmed our land to us, and gave us food." Then the chiefs of the other nations made speeches, to the same purpose as Oucekechum-pa's; after which a treaty of alliance and commerce was agreed to, and signed by Mr. Oglethorpe and them. Which being done, a laced coat, a laced hat, and a shirt, were given to each king: Each of the warriors had a gun and a mantle of duffils, and all their attendants had coarse cloth for cloathing and other things.

This treaty being concluded, Mr. Oglethorpe returned to England to procure the necessary supplies,



30 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
plies, and arrived here in June 1734, bringing  
with him Tomochichi, Mico or King of the  
Yamacraws, Senawki, his consort, and Yoo-  
nakowi, his nephew; as also Hillispilli, a war  
captain, and Apakowtiki, Stimaletchi, Sintou-  
chi, Hinguithi and Umphychi, five other Indian  
chiefs, with their interpreter.

These Indians were lodged at the Georgia of-  
fice in old Palace-yard, where they were hand-  
somerly entertained; and being suitably dressed,  
were introduced to the court, which was then at  
Kensington. Tomochichi presented to the king  
several eagles feathers, which according to their  
custom was the most respectful gift he could of-  
fer, and then made the following speech: " This  
" day I see the majesty of your face, the great-  
" ness of your house, and the number of your  
" people. I come for the good of the whole na-  
" tion called the Creeks, to renew the peace  
" they have long ago concluded with the English.  
" I am come over in my old days, though I  
" cannot live to reap any advantage to myself.  
" I am come for the good of the children of all  
" the nations of the Upper and Lower Creeks,  
" that they may be instructed in the knowledge  
" of the English. These are the feathers of the  
" eagle, the swiftest of all birds, who fly round  
" our nations. These feathers are in our land a  
" sign of peace, and we have brought them over  
" to leave with you, O great king, as a sign of  
" everlasting peace. O great king, whatsoever  
" words you shall say unto me, I will tell them  
" faithfully to all the kings of the Creek nations."

In

# ENGLISH

the 1734, bringing  
or King of the  
onfort, and Yoo-  
Hillispilli, a war  
naletchi, Sintou-  
five other Indian

the Georgia of-  
they were hand-  
suitably dressed,  
which was then at-  
tended to the king  
according to their  
if he could of-  
speech: " This  
face, the great-  
number of your  
the whole na-  
new the peace  
with the English.  
ays, though I  
rage to myself.  
children of all  
Lower Creeks,  
the knowledge  
feathers of the  
who fly round  
in our land a-  
ht them over  
as a sign of  
whatsoever  
will tell them  
reek nations."

In



*Indian Chiefs, making a Speech to King George I.*



In answer to this speech his majesty assured him, that all those nations should have his protection, and sincere regard.

These Indians afterwards took a tour through the nation, and during their stay in England gave the most evident marks of good sense, and of a sincere inclination to carry on a friendly correspondence between their own nation and ours. They in particular desired the trustees, that the weights, measures, prices, and qualities of goods to be purchased by them with their deer-skins might be settled. That nobody might be allowed to trade with them without a licence from the trustees, that if they were injured they might know where to complain, and that there might be but one store-house in each Indian town, for supplying them with the goods they might want to purchase, and that in each, the traders should be obliged to supply them at the fixed prices. Alledging that the traders had often in an arbitrary manner raised the price of goods, and defrauded them in their weights and measures; which had frequently created animosities between the English and Indians; that had ended in wars, prejudicial to both nations.

In compliance with this request, the trustees procured several acts of parliament; one for maintaining peace with these Indians; another to prevent the importation and use of spirituous liquors into the province of Georgia; and another to prevent the introduction of negroes into that province.

Things being thus settled, two embarkations were made the same year, chiefly of Saltburghers,

32 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
ers, who with others that went before, built and  
settled a town, called Ebenezer, upon the river  
Savannah. The succeeding year, the colony of  
South Carolina, sending over a memorial relat-  
ing to their danger from the French and Spani-  
ards, the parliament granted the trustees an ex-  
traordinary supply of 26,000*l.* and very consid-  
erable benefactions were made both in England  
and Carolina, on which account great numbers  
of people were sent, who consisted mostly of per-  
secuted German protestants, and others from the  
north of Scotland.

In January 1735, some highlanders arrived in  
Georgia and were settled on the Alatamaha river,  
about 16 miles distant from the island of St. Si-  
mon which is at its mouth. They soon raised  
convenient huts, till their houses could be built,  
and the town at their desire was called Darien,  
which name that district still retains, tho' they  
afterwards changed the name of the town to that  
of New Inverness.

On the 6th of February following, arrived the  
great embarkation, consisting of 470 persons,  
under the direction of Mr. Oglethorpe, and was  
settled upon the island of St. Simon. The Creek  
Indians came down upon this occasion, and in  
consequence of their claiming a right to the  
country, were treated with, when they agreed  
that the English should possess that and all the  
adjacent islands; which necessary step being tak-  
en, the town of Frederica was laid out, and the  
people set to work in building of houses.

The island of St. Simon is conveniently situa-  
ted at the mouth of the Alatamaha, a very fine  
river;

before, built and  
upon the river  
r, the colony of  
memorial relat-  
rench and Spani-  
e trustees an ex-  
and very confide-  
ooth in England  
great numbers  
d mostly of per-  
others from the

nders arrived in  
latamaha river,  
island of St. Si-  
they soon raised  
could be built,  
s called Darien,  
ains, tho' they  
he town to that

g, arrived the  
470 persons,  
orpe, and was  
a. The Creek  
caison, and in  
right to the  
they agreed  
ut and all the  
ep being ta-  
out, and the  
ases.

veniently situa-  
d, a very fine  
river;

river; it is about 40 miles in extent; has a rich and fruitful soil, and is full of oak and hickory trees, intermixed with meadows.

As soon as this settlement was made, care was taken for its security, on account of its being the southern barrier. A regular fortress strengthened with four bastions, and a spur work was erected at Frederica, towards the river; and several pieces of cannon mounted upon it: A strong battery was also raised, for the protection of Jekyll sound, where ten or twelve 40 gun ships may safely ride. Another fort was built on the south-west part of Cumberland island, where several pieces of cannon are pointed towards the river, so as to command all the sloops and small craft navigating that passage: within the palisade which surrounds the fort, are fine springs of water, and a good timber house, with large and convenient magazines under it, for ammunition and provisions.

But while such care was taken of the south frontier, the northern part of the colony was not neglected: Orders were given for erecting a fort at Augusta, a place situated on the river Savannah, where the traders with the Indians from South Carolina and Georgia resort, and where there are large warehouses furnished with such goods as are wanted by the Indians. The deer skins taken in exchange are sent 230 miles down the river, to the town of Savannah, in boats that carry each about 9000 weight. A horse road was also made from thence to the town of Savannah, and to the dwellings of the Cherokee Indians. By these precautions the trade of both colonies

34 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH colonies with these Indians was facilitated, and the country on that side, secured from any farther attempts of an enemy.

The colony now became so considerable as not only to draw the attention, but to excite the jealousy of the Spaniards, who would have been glad to have overpowered and driven out their neighbours, but the Indians being strongly attached to the English, the governor of St. Augustin, upon mature deliberation, found it more expedient to enter into a negociation, and to endeavour to conclude an amicable agreement with the English colony, and Mr. Oglethorpe concluded a treaty with him, upon very safe and advantageous terms; in which it was mutually agreed, that neither the Indians subject to the king of Spain should attack the subjects of Great-Britain, nor the Creeks commit hostilities against the subjects of his Catholic majesty. That Mr. Oglethorpe should draw off the garrison and artillery from the island of St. George, provided that none of his Catholic majesty's subjects should inhabit it, and that no prejudice should thence arise to the right of his Britannic majesty to that island. That the subjects of neither crown should molest each other, and the differences that might arise concerning the limits of their respective governments, and the dominion of the two crowns, should remain undecided till the determination of the respective courts. But it seems the governor of St. Augustin was not in the secret of his court, for the Spanish ministry laid claim to Georgia, as being within the dominion of Spain, and began

facilitated, and  
from any far-

considerable as not  
to excite the jea-  
lousy should have been  
driven out their  
strongly at-  
tending of St. Augus-  
tine found it more  
convenient, and to en-  
gagement with  
Oglethorpe conclud-  
ed safe and advan-  
tually agreed,  
by the king of  
Great-Britain,  
against the sub-  
ject of Mr. Ogle-  
thorpe and artillery  
led that none  
should inhabit  
the island.  
should molest  
might arise  
the govern-  
ment, two crowns,  
the determination of  
the governor  
of his court,  
to Georgia,  
and be-  
gan

gan to transport troops into Spanish Florida from  
the island of Cuba, and other parts of their do-  
minions. They disapproved of the treaty conclud-  
ed by the governor of St. Augustin, and made  
open preparations, in order to attack the colony  
of Georgia.

These preparations soon came to the know-  
ledge of the lieutenant governor of South Caro-  
lina, who sending a memorial to his majesty, he  
was pleased to order a regiment of 600 effective  
men to be raised, and sent for the defence and  
protection of Georgia; and as a farther encour-  
agement to these soldiers, the trustees gave each  
of them an allotment of five acres of land to cul-  
tivate for their own use and benefit, and it was  
resolved that each soldier, who after being seven  
years in the service, should be desirous of quitting  
it, should have his regular discharge, and be inti-  
tled to a grant of 20 acres.

In the beginning of the year 1737, the parlia-  
ment considering the great expences the trustees  
had been at, in making roads, building fortifica-  
tions, and sending presents to the Indians, grant-  
ed them 20,000*l.* more for the farther settling  
and securing the colony; on which the trustees  
made another embarkation, chiefly of persecuted  
German protestants; and in consequence of so  
considerable an augmentation of people, all the  
towns laid out in Georgia, received great sup-  
plies, and the utmost care was taken to put the  
fortifications into the best posture of defence that  
the circumstances of the province would allow.

On the arrival of the regiment of which Mr.  
Oglethorpe was appointed colonel, he distributed  
them



36 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
them in the properest manner for the service of  
the colony; but still kept up the same discipline  
and took as much care to form and regulate the  
inhabitants, with respect to military affairs as  
ever. He also provided different corps for differ-  
ent services; some for ranging the woods, and  
others light armed for sudden expeditions; he  
likewise provided vessels for scouring the sea  
coasts and for gaining intelligence.

The trustees, by their letters and instructions  
to the magistrates, had constantly exhorted and  
encouraged the people to cultivate their lands,  
but in 1738, finding that there were many who  
still continued in idleness, and were a burden to  
them, they gave orders for striking off the store,  
all who having had time to cultivate their lands,  
neglected this important duty, and at length a  
part of the people sent over a memorial to the  
trustees complaining of the want of a free sale  
in their lands, and of not being permitted the use  
of negroes. But those who were settled on the  
frontier, and were consequently most exposed to  
the Spaniards, having by their industry, improv-  
ed their plantations, so as to draw from them a  
comfortable subsistence, sent over a contrary me-  
morial, wherein they represented the disadvanta-  
ges and dangers that would arise from the per-  
mission of negroes.

At this very time they had intelligence that a  
conspiracy was formed by the negroes in South-  
Carolina, to raise and forcibly make their way  
out of the province, in order to put themselves  
under the protection of the Spaniards, who had  
proclaimed

for the service of  
the same discipline  
and regulate the  
military affairs  
at corps for differ  
the woods  
expeditions;  
scouring the fe

and instruction  
ly exhorted and  
ate their lands  
were many who  
were a burden to  
ing off the store  
vate their lands,  
and at length a  
memorial to the  
of a fee simple  
mitted the use  
settled on the  
most exposed to  
dustry, improv  
y from them a  
a contrary me-  
he disadvanta-  
from the per-

lligence that a  
oes in South  
ake their way  
ut themselves  
ds, who had  
proclaimed

proclaimed freedom to all who should run to them from their owners. As there was great reason to believe, that this rising was to be universal, and as the negroes were computed at 40,000, while the white inhabitants did not exceed 5000, the whole province was upon its guard. However, several negroes who were employed in Periaguas, carried them off, and took the benefit of the proclamation, by going to St. Augustin, upon which the government of South-Carolina sent a solemn deputation to demand their slaves; but though this was a time of profound peace, the governor of St. Augustin, peremptorily refused to deliver them up, and even declared that he had orders to receive and protect all who should come to him. Upon these representations, the trustees sent an answer, in which they positively refused to suffer the colony to have the use of slaves.

The trustees had the greatest reason for acting in this manner; since among the persons to whom grants were made, in order to their settling in the colony at their own expence, some never went over to take them up or to settle at all; others were gentlemen of Carolina, who neglected the prosecution of their grants, and never so much as desired to have their lands laid out; and several had quitted the laborious life of planters to reside more at their ease at Savannah, where, by the exercise of their several trades and professions, they brought many people in debt; besides, horse races and other diversions were set on foot, and such a spirit of idleness began to prevail, as easily accounted for their eagerness in desiring to have

38 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

have the use of negroes, and plainly shewed with what fatal consequences it must have been attended, if the trustees had not remained firm to their first resolutions, and had not given such an answer as shewed they were resolved to preserve that spirit in the colony upon which it was settled. However, to make the people as easy and contented as they could, they enlarged their grants on failure of issue male, and made a certain provision for the widows of the grantees.

In the mean time the French growing very uneasy at the settlement of Georgia, and our intercourse with the Indians, began to make use of every method in order to raise jealousies between us and the Creeks, which was no sooner known than it greatly alarmed not only the people settled in Georgia, but the whole province of Carolina, from a just sense of the danger to which they should be exposed, if the French, either by their artifices or presents, should draw over the Creek Indians to their party. Upon this, Mr. Oglethorpe thought it necessary to enter into a closer alliance with that nation, and to take a journey to the Coweta town, though at the distance of no less than 500 miles from Frederica, where he then was, and through a country very little known and very difficult for Europeans to travel. He however provided himself with horses and presents, and after a painful and fatiguing journey, reached that place in safety, where he was received by the Indians with all imaginable marks of friendship and respect, and had an opportunity of conferring, not only with the chiefs of all the tribes of that nation, but also with the depu-

plainly shewed with  
 must have been at  
 remained firm to  
 not given such a  
 resolved to preserv  
 which it was set  
 people as easy and  
 they enlarged their  
 and made a cer  
 of the grantees.  
 growing very un  
 ia, and our inter  
 to make use of  
 jealousies between  
 no sooner known  
 y the people fet  
 province of Caro  
 danger to which  
 French, either by  
 d draw over the  
 Upon this, Mr  
 enter into a clo  
 d to take a jour  
 at the distance  
 Frederica, where  
 untry very little  
 peans to travel  
 with horses and  
 fatiguing jour  
 where he was  
 ginable mark  
 an opportunit  
 he chiefs of all  
 with the depa  
 ties

ries of the Choctaws and Chickesaws, who lie between the English and French settlements, and who had sent their deputies thither with that view.

His coming to the Coweta Town dissipated all the fears, and extinguished all the jealousies of the Indians. They told him at the first conference that it had been insinuated to them, that he was coming into that country to deprive them of their lands, and that they had been assured he was actually preparing to invade them, but that by the intire confidence he placed in them, by coming without a body of regular troops, he convinced them that these were all falsehoods and calumnies, and that instead of injuring them by the settlement he was making, it would prove a new security to them, as well as to the English, and put it out of the power of their common enemies to hurt them; and in short they readily concluded a new, more full, and explicit treaty with him. Thus the designs of the French were unravelled, and the Creek nation became more closely connected with the English.

We have now run through the history of this province, for above seven years, and shall therefore, according to our plan, give a description of it.

The town of Savannah is situate in 31. 58 north latitude, and some years ago contained only 130 houses, besides warehouses and huts, but as these are, for the sake of the air and to prevent the spreading of fire, built at some distance from each other, they form several spacious squares and wide streets. There are also in the town, a

40 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

church, a court-house, a store-house, a gaol, a guard-house, a house for the trustees servants, a wharf, and some other public buildings. The town is excellently situated for trade, as the navigation of the river is very secure, and as ships of 300 tons may lie within six yards of the town, where the worm does not eat into them.

About four miles within the land from the river are Highgate, and Hampstead, two villages that lie at about a mile distance from each other. The people settled there apply themselves chiefly to gardening, and supply the town of Savannah with greens and roots. There are also 20 plantations within 20 miles round the Savannah.

About 15 miles from Savannah is a village called Abercorn, and about 20 miles farther up the river, is the town of Ebenezer, where the Saltburghers are settled. The people of this place, are so sober and industrious, that they not only raise a sufficient quantity of corn, and other produce for their own subsistence, but sell great quantities at Savannah, where the people have not been so careful of their plantations. They have large herds of cattle, and are in so thriving a condition, that no one person has abandoned his settlement or sent over the least complaint about the tenures, or the want of negroes.

About ten miles from thence is Old Ebenezer, situated upon a river which runs into the Savannah, where are kept a great number of cattle, for the use of the public and for breeding.

At a considerable distance from Old Ebenezer is the town of Augusta, which from the great resort of traders and Indians, is in a thriving condition.

ouse, a gaol, a  
tees servants, a  
uildings. The  
ade, as the na-  
e, and as ships  
ds of the town,  
them.

nd from the ri-  
d, two villages  
om each other.  
mselves chiefly  
n of Savannah  
e also 20 plan-  
Savannah.

s a village call-  
farther up the  
here the Salt-  
of this place,  
they not only  
and other pro-  
sell great quan-  
people have not

. They have  
so thriving a  
abandoned his  
mplaint about

Old Ebenezer  
nto the Savan-  
r of cattle, for  
ng.

Old Ebenezer  
from the great  
thriving con-  
dition

dition, and has been a great protection to both the provinces of Carolina and Georgia, against any designs of the French. In the northern part of the province, is the town of Inverness, on the river Alatamaha, where the Highlanders are settled. On the island of St. Simon, situated on the sea coast, is the town of Frederica, which has a regular magistracy as at Savannah: It is surrounded with strong fortifications, and at the south-east point of the island are barracks for 330 men. There are also settlements on Jekyl and Cumberland islands, to the southward of Frederica, and particularly in Cumberland island are two forts, one of which commands Amelia sound.

The land of Carolina lies low near the sea, and is covered with wood, but begins to rise into hills, at 25 miles distance, and at length terminates in mountains, which running in a line from north to south along the back of Virginia and Carolina, end in the province of Georgia, about 200 miles from the bay of Apalachia, in the gulph of Mexico. As there is a level country from the foot of these mountains to that sea, it was the more necessary to fortify the banks of the river Savannah and Alatamaha, in order to prevent the incursions of the Spaniards and French by land. The Savannah is navigable 300 miles for boats, and 600 for canoes. A range of islands runs parallel to the coast of Georgia, and defends it from the fury of the ocean; and as both the continent and islands are well wooded, the channels between them are extremely pleasant. There are also sand-banks, that extend upwards of 70 miles from the coast of Georgia, the water shoaling gradually,

dually, till within six miles of the land, where the shallowness of the banks bars all farther passage, except in the channels that lie between the bars. These were supposed a sufficient defence against the fleets of the French and Spaniards, till the latter found means to pass the channels, in the year 1742, and to attack the island of St. Simón, which had been lost with the town of Frederica, if general Oglethorpe had not, by his excellent conduct, defeated their designs.

When ships have passed the bars, they find a commodious and secure harbour, in the mouth of the river Savannah; and there is still a more capacious one in Jekyl sound, where a large fleet may lie at anchor in ten or fourteen fathoms of water. On this coast the tides generally flow seven feet.

Though the country of Georgia is not very fruitful, it is capable of producing some of the most valuable commodities, and particularly silk, which has been sent from thence to England, and is generally allowed to be equal to any brought from Italy; and sufficient quantities may in time be raised, to supply what is manufactured here, without our having recourse to foreign markets.

The people here reap very good wheat in May, mow their grass in June, and might cultivate rice to great advantage, if that was thought proper; olives flourish there in the greatest perfection; and in the south part of the province, orange trees thrive so extremely, that within seven years time they have been known to grow 15 feet from the root to the branches.

the land, where  
all farther pas-  
lie between the  
fficient defence  
Spaniards, till  
channels, in  
land of St. Si-  
town of Fre-  
ot, by his et-  
ns.

s, they find a  
in the mouth  
s still a more  
e a large fleet  
n fathoms of  
ally flow se-

is not very  
ome of the  
cularly silk,  
ngland, and  
ny brought  
ay in time  
ured here,  
market.  
at in May,  
tivate rice  
at proper ;  
perfection ;  
e, orange  
ven years  
feet from

C H A P. XXV.

*An account of Nova Scotia from its first discovery to its complete settlement in 1749. The proposals made to the soldiers and sailors after the peace, to provide for them by giving them land in Nova Scotia; the great success of these proposals; the building of the town of Halifax; and a description of the country.*

**W**E are now brought by the order of time to the settlement of Nova Scotia or Acadia. This country was in the reign of queen Elizabeth, considered as a part of Virginia, and as such was included in the charter of the western company established by king James I.

In the year 1618, sir Samuel Argall, governor of Virginia, made a cruizing voyage along the coast northwards, as far as cape Cod in New-England, when the Indians informing him that some white men, like himself, were come to inhabit to the northward of them, he being sensible that all the country, as far as it had been discovered by Cabot, belonged to the Virginia company his employers, sailed thither, and found a settlement, with a French ship riding before it. This vessel having but one deck, sir Samuel soon drove the men from it with his small arms, and having taken the ship, landed his men, marched to the fort, and summoned it to surrender. The French asked time to consider of it; but this being denied, they got privately away, and fled



44 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

into the woods; upon which the English entered the place, and having lodged there that night, the French came the next day, and surrendered themselves to sir Samuel, cancelling the patents that had been granted for their settlement by the French king. Sir Samuel now permitted those who chose it, to stay and take a passage to Europe in the fishing vessels, which then frequented the coast, and the rest, who were willing to join the English, he took with him to Virginia.

Sir Samuel being then informed, that the French had another settlement at a place they called Port Royal, situated on a bay on the south west coast of Acadia, sailed thither without delay, and obliged them also to surrender; when resolving that they should quit the country, he made those who did not care to return home, to remove to the river St. Laurence, where Quebec, now the capital of Canada, has since been built.

In the year 1621, Sir William Alexander, afterwards created Earl of Sterling, applied to King James I. for a grant of the country to the north of New-England: when it was suggested to that King that the tract of country on the continent of North-America, belonging to the crown, being very large, and not likely to be planted by the English in any reasonable time, it would be a very wise and prudent measure, to grant, under the great seal of Scotland, a part of it to his subjects of that kingdom, upon a supposition that it would be more beneficial to them, and more for the interest of these kingdoms, if they went over and settled there, than if, as they frequently did, they

the  
wh  
Sco  
T  
Jam  
Wil  
and  
sent  
ther  
A  
on a  
in he  
1623  
cape  
ton,  
Acad  
went  
Luke  
that h  
failed  
the pr  
try, w  
fir W  
lished  
order  
order  
Th  
Acadia  
New S  
tled by  
ment v  
that m  
was m  
fir Dav

English entered  
ere that night,  
nd surrendered  
g the patents  
lement by the  
mitted those  
age to Europe  
requested the  
ng to join the  
nia.

d, that the  
a place they  
on the south  
without de-  
nder; when  
country, he  
n home, to  
re Quebec;  
een built.  
ander, af-  
applied to  
try to the  
suggested  
n the con-  
he crown,  
anted by  
ould be a  
nt, under  
his sub-  
n that it  
more for  
ent over  
tly did,  
they

they removed to Poland, Sweden, and Russia, where there were at that time many thousands of Scots families.

These reasons appeared of such weight to king James, that he readily granted a patent to sir William, and the next year, that gentleman, and some others who were concerned with him, sent a ship with passengers to plant and settle there.

At that time Newfoundland was well known, on account of the fishery, and the ship being late in her voyage, put in, and wintered there. In 1623, they sailed from thence, and made the cape at the north shore of the island of Cape-Breton, and coasting till they came to Cape Sable in Acadia, they found three good harbours, and went ashore at one of them, which they called St. Luke's Bay. They there found a large river, that had eight fathoms water at ebb, and having sailed up it, the ship returned to England, and the proprietors published an account of the country, which they described as a kind of paradise; sir William Alexander himself wrote and published a book on this subject, and king James, in order to facilitate this plantation, erected a new order called the knights of Nova-Scotia.

Thus, that country, called by the French, Acadia, obtained the name of Nova-Scotia, or New Scotland, from its being intended to be settled by the Scots; but the scheme of that settlement was unhappily turned into a job, and by that means defeated. Afterwards another grant was made of the northern part of the country to sir David Kirk, from whom the French king bought

46 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

bought it, or at least agreed to give him 5000 l. for it. Though it is evident this proprietor had no more right to dispose of the property of the crown in that country, than a nobleman in England has to dispose of his estate to the French king, yet this is an evident proof that the French acknowledged the right by which that proprietor held it, and held so just an opinion of the pusillanimity of king James, as to be in no apprehensions of his vindicating the unalienable rights of the nation.

Oliver Cromwell however, sent major Sedgwick to dislodge the French from Port-Royal, which he did; and though he afterwards consented that a French proprietor should enjoy the country, yet it was upon condition that he should purchase it of the earl of Sterling, which he afterwards did, and then sold it to sir Thomas Temple, who was both proprietor and governor at the restoration: after which the French settled there again, and continued in the quiet possession of the country till the year 1690, when they were dispossessed by sir William Phipps, governor of New-England; but it was afterwards given up again to the French, by king William III. at the treaty of Ryfwick.

In all these changes the island of Cape-Breton followed the fate of Nova-Scotia, and both continued in the hands of the French till the year 1710, when governor Nicholson made himself master of Port-Royal, which was then become a place of great consequence, as it gave the French an opportunity of distressing our trade, to such a degree, that it was properly stiled the Dunkirk

give him 5000 l.  
 proprietor had  
 property of the  
 leman in Eng-  
 to the French  
 that the French  
 that proprietor  
 n of the pusil-  
 e in no appre-  
 lienable rights

t major Sedg-  
 n Port-Royal,  
 wards consent-  
 ld enjoy the  
 that he should  
 which he af-  
 o fir Thomas  
 and governor  
 French settled  
 quiet possession  
 en they were  
 , governor of  
 rds given up  
 m III. at the

Cape-Breton  
 nd both con-  
 ill the year  
 ade himself  
 en become a  
 the French  
 e, to such a  
 he Dunkirk  
 of

of America. The taking of this place was there-  
 fore considered as an important service, and queen  
 Anne, to shew that she would never part with it,  
 gave it her own name, and called it Annapolis-  
 Royal. Upon col. Nicholson's return to Eng-  
 land, she made him governor of Nova-Scotia and  
 of Annapolis-Royal, and command of all her  
 majesty's forces there, and in Newfoundland.

Things were in this situation, when the treaty  
 of Utrecht was concluded, by which our right to  
 Nova-Scotia, or Acadia, with all its ancient  
 boundaries, the city of Port-Royal, now called  
 Annapolis, and every thing in those parts that  
 depend on lands and islands, together with the  
 dominion, property and possession, of the said  
 islands and lands, shall be for ever vested in the  
 crown of Great-Britain: to which the French  
 king added, the exclusion of the subjects of France  
 from fishing on the coast of Nova-Scotia, and  
 within 30 leagues, beginning from Cape Sable,  
 and stretching along to the southwest.

This colony was however much neglected for  
 many years; for though Nova-Scotia had been  
 so long delivered up to the English, yet we had  
 scarce any settlement there, except at Annapolis  
 Royal, and Canso, while the French had a num-  
 ber of little towns and villages, scattered along  
 the coast, and on the banks of the rivers; but  
 the English commander at Annapolis, was in some  
 degree acknowledged as governor. The country  
 was then divided into ten or twelve districts, and  
 each district annually chose a deputy to be ap-  
 proved by the commander and council at Anna-  
 polis;

48 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

polis; this deputy was a sort of agent for his countrymen the descendants of the French in that district, and reported the state of it from time to time; but in what manner is not difficult to determine. There was no civil power; the French missionaries who were not only appointed by the bishop of Quebec, but absolutely under his direction in their several districts and villages, acted as the sole magistrates, or justices of the peace; yet all complaints might, if the parties thought proper, be brought before the commander and the council at Annapolis, which was very rarely done.

In this wretched situation were these two settlements in the beginning of the war before the last, surrounded by disguised enemies, continually encroaching, and whose numbers daily increased. At length these descendants of the French, though professedly the subjects of Great-Britain, joined with that nation, destroyed Canso, and laid siege to Annapolis, but without success, so that at the conclusion of the peace in the beginning of 1749, there were no other English in Nova-Scotia, besides the garrison of Annapolis, and the inhabitants who lived within a few miles round that place.

However; the peace was no sooner concluded, than the earl of Halifax projected the complete settlement of Nova-Scotia by the English, and animated with the warmest zeal for the honour and interest of his country, resolved to use his utmost endeavours to carry it in the most effectual manner into execution. He with the other lords commissioners of trade and plantations, having gained

agent for his  
the French in  
state of it from  
er is not difficult  
vil power; the  
only appointed  
bsolutely under  
ts and villages,  
justices of the  
if the parties  
the command-  
which was very

these two fet-  
war before the  
nies, continu-  
bers daily en-  
dants of the  
ects of Great-  
estroyed Can-  
without suc-  
peace in the  
ther English  
of Annapo-  
within a few

concluded,  
he complete  
nglish, and  
the honour  
o use his ut-  
ost effectual  
other lords  
ns, having  
gained

gained his majesty's approbation, they in March 1749, published proposals, offering proper encouragement to such of the officers and private men, as after the late conclusion of the peace, had been dismissed his majesty's land and sea-service, and were willing to accept of grants, in order to settle in Nova-Scotia. Fifty acres of land in fee simple were offered to every private soldier or seaman, free from the payment of any quit-rents and taxes, for the term of ten years, and at the expiration of that time they were to pay only one shilling a year for every 50 acres. But this was not all, every private soldier or sea-man who had a family, was to have ten acres for every person of which his family consisted, including women and children; and farther grants were to be made to them on the like conditions, in proportion as their families encreased, or to their abilities for cultivating the land.

Eighty acres were offered on the same conditions, to every officer in the land-service under the rank of ensign, and that of lieutenant in the sea-service, and to those who had families, 15 acres more for every person of which their families consisted.

On the same conditions 200 acres were to be granted to every ensign, 300 to every lieutenant, 400 to every captain, and 600 to every officer above the rank of captain, in the land service. Every lieutenant in the sea-service was to have 400 acres, and every captain 600; while such of the above officers who had families, were offered a further grant of 30 acres, over and above their respective quotas for every person belonging to them.

50 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

them. The same conditions that were proposed to private soldiers and sailors, were also offered to carpenters, ship-wrights, smiths, masons, joiners, brickmakers, bricklayers, and all other artificers necessary in building and husbandry.

In short, all who were willing to accept these proposals, were to be subsisted with their families, not only during their passage, but for 12 months after their arrival at Nova-Scotia; and to be furnished with arms and ammunition as far as should be thought necessary for their defence; with a proper quantity of materials and utensils for husbandry, clearing and cultivating their lands, erecting houses, carrying on the fishery, and such other purposes as might be found proper for their support.

These generous proposals had all the success that could be desired; and about the beginning of May most of the transports set sail from Portsmouth, with above 3000 families, and soon after others followed from Liverpool and Ireland. This embarkation, which was the largest ever made on such an occasion, was doing at once what in other settlements had not been done under a long course of years. This great number of settlers arrived safe at Chebucto harbour on the 28th of July, after a pleasant passage of between five and six weeks; losing few or none in the voyage, which was in a great measure owing to the ventilators, fixed in the transports; a happy invention, then but lately discovered.

On the arrival of this numerous body, they found the Sphinx of 20 guns, which had entered the

the  
wal  
had  
Cap  
nati  
fron  
harb  
burn  
brin  
mild  
and  
time  
from  
settle  
recti  
T  
upon  
the  
coun  
lity  
each  
order  
entra  
being  
was  
of a  
bucto  
grou  
woul  
north  
time  
chora  
with  
vigab

ere proposed  
also offered  
hs, masons,  
nd all other  
sbandy.  
accept these  
their fami-  
but for 12  
otia; and to  
on as far as  
r defence;  
nd utensils  
ating their  
he fishery,  
found pro-

he success  
beginning  
om Portl-  
soon after  
l Ireland.  
geft ever  
at once  
done un-  
t number  
ur on the  
between  
e in the  
owing to  
a happy  
ly, they  
entered  
the

the harbour a few days before, with col. Cornwallis, their governor on board. His excellency had been informed of the arrival of the French at Cape-Breton, which had been just restored to that nation, he therefore sent for the English garrison from Louisburgh, and they soon after entered the harbour, with the regiments of Hopson and Warburton, on board other transports; the officers bringing with them all their furniture, several milch cows, and other stock, with military stores, and ammunition of all sorts. About the same time there also arrived a company of rangers from Annapolis, and encamped near the new settlers, in order to give them assistance and protection.

The next care of the governor, was to pitch upon a proper spot for the first settlement, and as the peninsula appeared preferable, both on account of its commodious situation, and the fertility of the soil, the able-bodied men on board each ship were employed in clearing ground in order to build a town at the south point, at the entrance of Sandwich river; but many objections being soon found against that place, another spot was chosen by the governor, at about the distance of a mile and a half from it, on the side of Chebucto harbour, and on the declivity of a rising ground that commands the whole peninsula, and would shelter the town when built from the north-west winds. The beach they found was a fine gravel, convenient for small boats, the anchorage was every where good for large ships, within gun-shot of the town, and small but navigable rivers of fresh and wholesome waters flowed



52 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
flowed round about it. Here then they made a second and more successful attempt, and indeed it would not have been easy to have chosen a more happy situation, they therefore cleared the ground in as expeditious a manner as possible, and having erected a large wooden house for the governor, with proper storehouses, the ground was laid out so as to form a number of strait and beautiful streets, crossing each other at equal distances, upon a most excellent plan, said to have been formed by the earl of Halifax; the work went on briskly; the people of New-England brought several ships laden with planks, door-cases, doors, window-frames, and other parts of houses; and the people being employed in ships companies, this created an emulation, that rendered their labours remarkably successful, so that in about three years time, this town, which was named Halifax, from that noble lord, to whom this settlement owed its beginning, was finished, and every family had a good house of their own, of which the master was landlord. Within the same space of time were also erected a church, and wharfs, the town was pallisadoed, and other fortifications erected: some land was also cleared for agriculture, and already planted, notwithstanding the opposition they met with from the French, and their tools, the Indians. To explain this circumstance, it is necessary to observe, that in the beginning of the settlement, and soon after the landing of the English, 100 black cattle and some sheep were brought them by land from a French settlement at Minas, a town about 30 miles from the bottom of Bedford Bay; and French

Fren  
missi  
those  
towa  
also  
ance  
the g  
missi  
the p  
ed of  
the E  
fortif  
fore s  
desce  
medic  
engag  
vours  
ing;  
ed an  
when  
in the  
in the  
to the  
joinin  
scalpe  
ever p  
indust  
tioned  
But  
lands,  
this w  
for tho  
rack a  
they fr

y made a se-  
and indeed it  
nosen? more  
d the ground  
le, and hav-  
or the gover-  
ground was  
f strait and  
at equal dif-  
aid to have  
; the work  
w-England  
unks, door-  
her parts of  
ed in ships  
, that ren-  
ful, so that  
which was  
to whom  
s finished,  
their own,  
Within the  
a church,  
and oher  
so cleared  
notwith-  
from the  
o explain  
rve, that  
l soon af-  
ack cattle  
nd from  
about 30  
y; and  
French

French deputies also coming to make their sub-  
missions, it was proposed to cut a road thither,  
those deputies promising to contribute 50 men  
towards carrying on that work. The English  
also received the promise of friendship and assist-  
ance from the Indians, their chiefs waiting upon  
the governor for that purpose. But these sub-  
missions and these promises were soon broken, by  
the perfidy of the French court, which disapproved  
of these proceedings, and resolved to harrass  
the English before their town was built, and their  
fortifications erected. Instructions were there-  
fore sent from France to be communicated to the  
descendants of the French in Nova-Scotia, and im-  
mediately the scene was changed; the French  
engaged the Indians to use their utmost endea-  
vours to prevent the new colony from proceed-  
ing; and the year in which peace was proclaim-  
ed and Cape-Breton restored was not expired,  
when the town began to be frequently attacked  
in the night, and the English, in a country which  
in the strongest terms had been secured by treaty  
to the British crown, could not stir into the ad-  
joining woods, without the danger of being shot,  
scalped, or taken prisoners. The English how-  
ever prosecuted the settlement with indefatigable  
industry, and the town, as has been already men-  
tioned, was soon happily finished.

But it was impossible to clear woods and plough  
lands, without separating into small parties, and  
this work was rendered extremely dangerous;  
for though the French and Indians durst not at-  
tack any considerable body of the English, yet  
they frequently fell upon small parties; and tho'  
they

54 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
they had been often repulsed, they always re-  
turned, whenever they could find an opportunity  
of doing it to advantage. Complaint of this  
open war in a time of peace, was now made to  
the court of France, when his most christian ma-  
jesty proposed that commissaries should be ap-  
pointed to settle the bounds of Nova-Scotia; but  
those of the French endeavouring by all the arts  
of sophistry, to prove that Nova-Scotia ceded to  
the English by the treaty of Utrecht, was no  
more than the peninsula of that country, the Bri-  
tish commissaries justified our claim to the whole,  
by memorials filled with the strongest and most  
evident proofs; and the most trifling answers be-  
ing returned to these, admiral Boscawen was sent  
to seize the French ships in North-America, that  
England might once more have something to re-  
store to France, as an inducement to that faith-  
less nation to adhere to her treaties; but this ex-  
pedient was in vain; France appeared evidently  
to have concerted the means of conquering all  
the British dominions on the continent of Ame-  
rica, and therefore war was entered into to pre-  
vent it. During which the town of Halifax be-  
came firmly established, and that being the prin-  
cipal rendezvous for our men of war, which nat-  
urally causes a quick circulation of money, the  
inhabitants were soon in a very prosperous situa-  
tion.

Nova-Scotia is situated in between  $41^{\circ} 30'$  and  
 $49^{\circ} 30'$  north latitude, and between  $60$  and  $66^{\circ}$   
of west longitude, and is bounded by the bay of  
St. Laurence, on the north-east; by the river of  
St. Laurence on the north-west; by New-Eng-  
land

always re-  
 opportunity  
 plaint of this  
 now made to  
 christian ma-  
 should be ap-  
 Scotia; but  
 all the arts  
 tia ceded to  
 ht, was no  
 ry, the Bri-  
 o the whole,  
 ft and most  
 answers be-  
 en was sent  
 erica, that  
 hing to re-  
 that faith-  
 out this ex-  
 d evidently  
 uering all  
 t of Ame-  
 ato to pre-  
 Halifax be-  
 the prin-  
 which na-  
 oney, the  
 ous situa-  
 . 30. and  
 and 66°  
 ne bay of  
 e river of  
 ew-Eng-  
 land

and on the south-west, and by the bay of Fundy,  
 and the Atlantic ocean on the east. According to  
 these limits it contains about 420 miles in length,  
 and 380 in breadth. The south-eastern part is a  
 large peninsula, extending from the north-east  
 to the south-west, and joined to the main land  
 by an isthmus a little above the gulph of Canso.  
 Though the weather is very sharp in winter, yet  
 the air, especially about the town of Halifax, is  
 remarkably clear, so that the severest frosts are  
 frequently accompanied with a fine azure sky and  
 sunshine: but though the cold in winter is very  
 severe, the summer is hotter than in England.  
 The coast has the advantage of many bays, har-  
 bours, and creeks, and the land is enriched by  
 many rivers, some of which are navigated for a  
 long course by the native Indians. The harbour  
 of Chebueto, upon which is situated the metro-  
 polis, may justly be esteemed one of the finest in  
 the world, and has extraordinary advantages for  
 a fishery. The entrance into it is from the south,  
 with a large island of an irregular form, lying  
 on the north-east side, named Cornwallis island,  
 from the first governor of Halifax. Betwixt this  
 island and the opposite shore on the south-west, is  
 a channel deep enough for the largest ships. This  
 island, as well as a smaller one that lies higher  
 up the harbour, named George Island, is very  
 commodiously situated for a fishery, and has con-  
 veniencies of all sorts proper for drying and cur-  
 ing the fish.

About two miles higher up the harbour is a  
 creek on the south-west side, with a small har-  
 bour at its entrance. This creek, which was call-  
 ed

ed by the first settlers of Halifax, Sandwich River, is at the mouth about as wide and deep as the Thames at London-Bridge, and is salt water for about four or five miles up, when it terminates where a small fresh water rivulet falls into it from the north. From the mouth of Sandwich River to the opposite side of the harbour, is about two miles, with good anchoring ground for the largest ships in any part of it, and a fine watering place on the north-east side: the land on both sides is exceeding high, and in general very rich and fertile, but covered with wood.

About four or five miles north of the above river is a narrow entrance of half a mile into Bedford Bay, which is about 12 miles in circumference, and has several creeks at the bottom of it, abounding with the finest salmon in the greatest plenty: there are also several islands in it; and a great quantity of pines, fit for masts, grow on the western side of it. This bay, with the harbour, and Sandwich river divide the peninsula from the main land.

Upon the opposite shore are several large rivers, among which that of St. John is the most considerable. It is ten leagues distant from the gut of Annapolis, and has a very long course. There are prodigious falls of water near its mouth no less than 30 fathoms deep, occasioned by the great head of water above, and the channel here being pent up between two steep mountains. By this river, and the assistance of some land carriage, there is a communication with the river of St. Laurence; the French had therefore erected a  
fort

fort u  
the be  
Th  
tridge  
heron  
of the  
are o  
found  
straw  
Th  
at ab  
from  
staves

Sandwich Ri-  
 e and deep an  
 l is salt water  
 hen it termi-  
 uler falls into  
 of Sandwich  
 e harbour, is  
 oring ground  
 t, and a fine  
 de: the land  
 l in general  
 th wood.  
 of the above  
 a mile into  
 s in circum-  
 e bottom of  
 n the great-  
 ands in it;  
 masts, grow  
 y, with the  
 the penin-  
 arge rivers,  
 most confi-  
 the gut of  
 se. There  
 mouth no  
 ed by the  
 annel here  
 rains. By  
 and carri-  
 ne river of  
 erected a  
 fort

fort upon it, which was taken by the English in the beginning of the late war.

The woods abound with game, especially partridges, wild ducks, wild geese, woodcocks, herons, pigeons, &c. among the beasts are most of the sorts found in New-England. The trees are oak, fir, spruce, birch, &c. and the fruit found growing wild, are goosberries, raspberries, strawberries, &c.

The inhabitants of this province, are computed at above 20,000. The commodities exported from thence are chiefly lumber, such as plank, staves, hoops, joists, &c. and fish.

T H E  
Discoveries and Settlements

O F T H E  
F R E N C H I N A M E R I C A .

C H A P . I .

*An account of the voyages made to America, by John Verazzano under the reign of Francis I. The first establishment of the French on the banks of the river St. Laurence, and the difficulties they found in fixing a colony in those parts. With a concise description of Canada, or New France, the city of Quebec, and other places now subject to Great-Britain; together with an account of the lakes and rivers, and particularly the famous cataract of Niagara.*

**T**H E French have published some accounts of their visiting North-America, at the close of the 15th and the beginning of the 16th centuries, but these accounts, which are very uncertain, can at most only prove, that some French seamen  
and

and pilots were then employed in the Newfoundland fishery, and had some small knowledge of the adjacent continent.

However in 1523, Francis I. began to think of forming settlements on the coast of America, and with this view sent John Verazzano a Florentine with one ship, on board of which were 50 men with provisions for eight months; but he returned to Dieppe in July 1524, and we have no account that he made any discoveries.

He however failed again on the same design towards the latter end of the following year, and arrived on some part of the coast of North-America, but where is not certain. He was however so timorous, that he did not care to venture within any of the bays or ports; but wanting water, and lying in a road near the shore, persuaded one of the marines to swim to it, and by means of some presents, with which he furnished him, endeavoured to procure what he wanted from the natives, who came down in crowds upon the strand to gaze at the ship.

The poor mariner on his landing and getting a nearer view of the Indians, was so extremely amazed and terrified at their uncouth appearance, that throwing his presents upon the ground, he ran as fast as he could and cast himself again into the sea, in order to swim to the ship; but the waves threw him back upon the shore with such force, that he lay breathless upon the sands, and would probably have been drowned, if the natives had not hastened to his relief, and taking him up, carried him in their arms to a place at some distance, where with great humanity, they took

ements

RICA.

ica, by John  
I. The first  
ks of the ri-  
they found  
with a concise  
ce, the city  
to Great-  
the lakes  
us cataract

accounts  
e close of  
centuries,  
ncertain,  
n seamen  
and



60 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

took all the pains they could to bring him to himself. But when he recovered his senses a little, and saw none about him but Indians, he set up such a cry as made the woods ring, at which the natives hoping to pacify him, cried as loud or louder than he, which terrified him still more. At last they made a great fire, before which they undressed him, greatly admiring the whiteness of his skin, and the hair on several parts of his body. The poor fellow concluding that they were going to eat or to burn him, trembled extremely, while those on board seeing every thing that was done, were very much frightened, and every moment expected to see him sacrificed: however by degrees they were all convinced that these dreadful Indians had not the least intention to hurt him; for after drying his cloaths, they suffered him to put them on again, and having given him something to eat, conducted him, at his own desire, to the sea side, and then retiring to some distance looked on till he swam safely on board the ship, and then quietly departed; upon which Verazzano returned to France, and reported nothing but this story, and that it happened in the latitude of 50°.

The next year however, he engaged in a third voyage, wherein he was lost; but from his expeditions, which were carried on thirty years later than those of the Cabots, the French have no great reason to boast of their success.

It was some years before the French thought of fitting out any more ships for discovery, but at length James Carrier, an experienced pilot of St. Malots ventured on another expedition, and

failed with  
and a  
the  
ice an  
south  
name  
count  
shore.

It  
fore v  
broug  
silver,  
Spani  
These  
they  
cried  
took f  
since b  
tion is  
thors.

Car  
the co  
Laure  
return

The  
large f  
the gu  
that na  
river,  
it the  
as the  
islands  
though

failed from that port on the 20th of April 1534, with two ships of 60 tons each, and 120 men, and arriving on the coast of Newfoundland, on the 10th of May, found the country covered with ice and snow; this induced him to sail to the southward, and entering a bay which bears the name of Spanish Harbour, he liked both the country and the people, and boldly went on shore.

It is reported that the Spaniards had long before visited this coast, and some authorities are brought to prove it, but finding neither gold nor silver, they hastily returned on board, crying in Spanish *Aca Nada!* or there is nothing here. These words being remembered by the Indians, they no sooner saw the French land, than they cried *Aca Nada! Aca Nada!* which the latter took for the name of the country, and it has ever since been called *Canada*: strange as this derivation is, it is mentioned by the best French authors.

Cartier afterwards sailed along great part of the coast which borders upon the gulph of St. Laurence and the islands situated in it, and then returned to France.

The next year he was sent again with three large ships to make a settlement, and entering the gulph on the feast of St. Laurence, gave it that name, which was afterwards extended to the river, though in the first voyage, he had called it the river of *Canada*; he now sailed up as high as the fall of St. Louis, giving such names to the islands and rivers, as he thought proper. But though he at first was much pleased with the

E

country,

country, yet 25 of the people dying with the scurvy, he began to consider it was a very unwholesome climate. At last he himself was attacked with this dreadful distemper, upon which he applied to the inhabitants as well as he could, to learn whether they had any cure for it, and they taught him to make an infusion of the leaves and bark of the white thorn tree, by which means all who were sick were speedily recovered; and as soon as the season of the year would permit, he returned to France without making any settlement.

Three or four years after the project for settling this country was again revived, and Francis de la Roque lord of Roberval, undertaking this affair, king Francis I. granted him letters patent in 1540, and gave him abundance of titles, as viceroy and lieutenant-general of Canada, Hockelaga, Saguenay, Newfoundland, Belle Isle, Cape Breton, Labrador, &c. allowing him the same power and authority in those places, that he had himself, which was very easily done, as there was not a Frenchman, or a cottage in any one of those places. De la Roque, however being a man of family and fortune, resolved to pursue this expedition, and therefore prevailed upon James Cartier by large promises, to undertake another voyage to the coast of Canada, in quality of his pilot; and this gentleman in two or three voyages, formed some settlements which were the first made by the French in America, but these were afterwards abandoned.

The navigation of the river St. Laurence fell from time to time into different hands, and several

ral voy  
pose. H  
after ha  
founded  
bestowe  
country  
cluded  
fore be  
crosses  
had ta  
English  
they b  
places,  
French  
limits,  
the gu  
French  
settle  
Quebe  
In i  
his cor  
limits  
bec an  
settle  
France  
sequen  
shoul  
had al  
that co  
it shou  
restore  
they p  
those  
on; b

g with the  
s a very un-  
self was at-  
upon which  
as he could,  
e for it, and  
of the leaves  
by which  
y recovered;  
would per-  
aking any

ject for set-  
and Francis  
taking this  
tters patent  
of titles, as  
ada, Hock-  
le Isle, Cape  
n the same  
that he had  
e, as there  
any one of  
eing a man  
ourfue this  
upon James  
ke another  
ality of his  
three voya-  
a were the  
, but these

urance fell  
and feve-  
ral

ral voyages were made thither to very little pur-  
pose. However, about the year 1608, the French,  
after having settled and abandoned several places,  
founded the city of Quebec, and some time after  
bestowed the name of New France upon that  
country, under which name they not only in-  
cluded Acadia and other coasts that had long be-  
fore been discovered by the English, but set up  
crosses and the French arms, to shew that they  
had taken possession of them. But though the  
English colonies were then but thinly inhabited,  
they boldly asserted their prior rights to those  
places, demolished their crosses, drove away the  
French wherever they found them within their  
limits, and forced them to confine their views to  
the gulph and river of St. Laurence; where the  
French, with much difficulty raised three or four  
settlements in the space of 20 years, of which  
Quebec was, and still continues the capital.

In 1629 sir David Kirk with the English under  
his command considering Canada as within the  
limits of the British dominions, attacked Que-  
bec and made himself master of all the French  
settlements, and when this news was carried to  
France, Canada was considered of such little con-  
sequence, that it was long debated whether they  
should demand the restitution of it, though they  
had already established a company for managing  
that commerce; but it was at last resolved that  
it should be demanded, and it was accordingly  
restored by the treaty of 1632. From that time  
they pursued their discoveries and settlements in  
those parts, for several reigns without molesta-  
tion; but those settlements were attended with

64 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

great difficulties and a vast expence, and company after company was set up to promote a trade to them, without obtaining any great advantage; for before the French had made any regular settlements, the country was so far from being agreeable to the constitution of the people, that of the numbers sent thither, a great part perished by the hardships they endured, many took the first opportunity of returning, and afterwards gave such a dreadful account of the colony they had left, as discouraged others from going thither; but the greatest obstacle the colony met with, was their continual wars with the natives, of which they have given us very large accounts.

The French kept possession of this country till the 13th of September, 1759, when Quebec was surrendered to the generals Monkton and Townshend, who commanded the British troops that had been destined for the expedition against it the preceding spring, under the command of general Wolf, and on the 8th of September, 1760, all Canada was given up to the English by the capitulation signed at Montreal, by Mons. de Vandreuil, the French governor, and general Amherst, and has since been confirmed to the British crown by the late treaty of peace concluded at Fontainebleau. This country, now denominated the province of Quebec, is much the largest of any we possess upon the continent. Quebec, the metropolis, which is near the centre of it, is situated in the 16th degree 55 minutes north latitude, and in 69 degrees 48 minutes west longitude, and is bounded on the north-

north-  
John's  
bued l  
southe  
Englan  
500 m  
and up

Tho  
ated in  
sively f  
the mi  
dle of  
est-rive  
try is g  
but n  
French  
da, an  
to the  
corn, p  
of herb  
are mu  
same n  
that w  
may f  
not bu  
ease.

The  
cially o  
they p  
export  
pipe-fr  
The  
try is c  
and pr

and compa-  
note a trade  
advantage;  
regular fet-  
from being  
people, that  
part perish-  
ny took the  
afterwards  
colony they  
going thi-  
colony met  
he natives,  
large ac-

country till  
nebec was  
nd Town-  
oops that  
against it  
nd of ge-  
er, 1760,  
th by the  
Monf. de  
l general  
d to the  
conclud-  
w deno-  
uch the  
ontinent.  
the cen-  
55 mi-  
48 mi-  
on the  
north-

north-east by the gulph of St. Laurence, and St. John's river; on the north-west by wild uninhabited lands; on the south-west by the same; and southerly by the provinces of New-York, New-England, and Nova-Scotia; extending about 500 miles from the north-east to the south-west, and upwards of 200 miles in breadth.

Though the northern parts of Canada are situated in the temperate zone, yet the air is excessively sharp, and their winter, which sets in about the middle of November, and lasts till the middle of May, is so excessively severe, that their largest rivers and lakes are frozen over, and the country is generally covered with disagreeable fogs; but notwithstanding these inconveniences, the French boast very much of the fertility of Canada, and indeed where it is uncultivated, as it is to the south, it yields Indian and other sorts of corn, pease, beans, and great plenty of most kinds of herbs and vegetables. The trees and fruits are much the same as in New-England, and the same may be said with respect to animals; so that with a reasonable degree of labour people may subsist there tolerably well, and as they are not burdened with taxes, they live much at their ease.

The produce of Canada consists of furs, especially castors, and in several kinds of skins, which they purchase from the natives; and there are exported from thence some sorts of drugs, planks, pipe-staves, &c.

The greatest part of the commerce of the country is carried on in light canoes made of bark, and proper for navigating their lakes and rivers,

66 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

which are encumbered with rocks and interrupted with water-falls, that render them unfit for other vessels. In winter they make use of sledges, drawn either by horses or dogs; and as these are proper for passing over vast tracts of snow and ice, they enable them to continue their commerce with the Indians all the winter.

The great river of St. Laurence, which is at its mouth about 60 miles broad, is said to run thro' five or six great lakes, namely Ontario, Erie, the lake of the Hurons, Michigan, the Upper Lake, the lake of Leucmipagon, and that of the Assinipouals, beyond which the Indians say there is another lake, still greater than any of these, from which this river originally flows; but the truth however seems to be, that this river proceeds from the lake Ontario, and from thence runs a course of 200 leagues to the sea. At the mouth of the river of St. Laurence lies the island of Anticosti, upon which the French had a small settlement for the sake of trading with the Indians on both sides for seal skins and furs, in exchange for which, they give them fire arms and ammunition.

The city of Quebec is situated upon the great river of St. Laurence, at the distance of about 100 leagues from its mouth. It is very large and strong, for besides a fortress, or kind of citadel in which the governor resides, the whole extent of the place is covered by a regular fortification, with several redoubts well furnished with artillery. The principal buildings in this city are the cathedral, the episcopal palace, the Jesuits college, and several other religious houses. But if

E N C H

and interrupt  
them unfit for  
the use of sledg-  
; and as these  
of snow and  
their commerce

which is at  
s said to run  
ely Ontario,  
Michigan, the  
gon, and that  
the Indians  
r than any of  
ly flows; but  
at this river  
from thence  
sea. At the  
es the island  
had a small  
n the Indian  
furs, in ex-  
e arms and

n the great  
e of about  
y large and  
f citadel in  
e extent of  
rtification,  
with artil-  
ty are the  
esuits col-  
s. But if  
is

*[Faint, illegible text, likely bleed-through from the reverse side of the page.]*





it t  
but  
not  
ma  
up  
Fr  
55-  
but  
part  
of t  
of t  
each  
mea  
ly p  
dere  
stom  
and  
thir  
ans  
the f  
near  
As  
on b  
give  
with  
fist  
ral, a  
Mont  
admi  
a gre  
a cha  
the ch  
places  
mouth

it be considered that this is not only the capital, but almost the only town in New France, it is not at all surprizing that these edifices are very magnificent; and that besides these it contains upwards of 15,000 well built dwelling-houses. From Quebec to Montreal in the latitude of 45°. 55. the banks of the river are pretty well settled, but without either towns or villages, and this part of the country is distinguished by the name of the coasts. Indeed some of the writers speak of two villages between Quebec and Montreal, each of 50 leagues in extent, by which they only mean that both sides of the river are so thoroughly planted, that each of the banks may be considered as a village. The town of Montreal is strong by its situation, is surrounded with a wall and a dry ditch, and is thought to have about a third as many inhabitants as Quebec. The Indians come thither in boats to sell their skins, for the sake of which Montreal was built, and is now nearly as large and populous as Quebec.

As the manner in which the trade was carried on by the French is pretty singular, we shall here give it our readers: when the Indians in alliance with the French came thither to trade, their chief first demanded audience of their governor general, and if he was not there, of the governor of Montreal, to whom he was with great ceremony admitted. This audience was generally given in a great square in the middle of the town; where a chair of state was placed for the governor, and the chiefs of the several Indian nations, took their places round him, with their pipes in their mouths. After a due silence, the eldest chief of the



68 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

the Indians laid down his pipe, stood up, and addressed himself to the governor: He told him, that his brethren were come to visit him, and to renew their ancient league and friendship with his nation: that having nothing in view but the care and advantage of the French, they had brought down with them good quantities of skins and furs, being sensible that the French could not obtain so many, or so good, if they did not bring them down to their settlements; that they were sensible how much they were esteemed in France, and knew that what they were to take in exchange, were but paltry things and of little value; but that their good friends the French might not be without furs they were content to deal with them; and therefore hoped, that in order to enable them to bring a greater plenty of them the next year, as well as to fall upon their enemies, they would let them have guns, powder, and ball, upon reasonable terms. At the close of this speech he laid a string of beads, and a bundle of skins at the governor's feet, and desired leave to secure them a free and fair trade, and to protect them from robbers. Then he retired to his place, and took up his pipe again. The governor now assured them of his protection, and made them a present in return. The next day the trade began, and was soon over; by which the French gained very considerably; but they were not allowed to sell either wine or brandy to the Indians, because they were extremely apt to drink to excess, and were then furious and mad, and at such times if they did any mischief to one another, or to the French, they could scarce

scarce  
they  
man  
just t  
of h  
ed at  
banks  
comm  
carria  
rivers  
tion.  
is Ont  
and b  
receiv  
rence,  
From  
munic  
and b  
eight l  
is also  
ver Ni  
it nece  
The lar  
ron for  
Erie w  
French  
in circ  
most de  
ed with  
plum t  
clusters  
tremely  
keys are

od up, and  
 he told him,  
 him, and to  
 ndship with  
 view but the  
 they had  
 ties of skins  
 h could not  
 id not bring  
 t they were  
 l in France,  
 take in ex-  
 d of little  
 he French  
 content to  
 ed, that in  
 r plenty of  
 upon their  
 uns, pow-  
 At the  
 eads, and  
 t, and de-  
 fair trade,  
 en he re-  
 pe again.  
 rotection,  
 The next  
 over; by  
 bly; but  
 or bran-  
 extremely  
 rious and  
 mischief-  
 ey could  
 scarce

scarce be brought to give any satisfaction; for they affirmed, it was the liquor, and not the man, that did the mischief; and that it was unjust to punish a person for what he did when out of his senses. The other settlements are scattered at a great distance from each other, along the banks of the rivers and lakes, between which a communication is kept up, by water, and by land carriage, where the cataracts render sailing in the rivers impracticable, without immediate destruction. The first of these lakes of any consequence is Ontario, which is 180 leagues in circumference, and between 20 and 25 fathoms in depth. It receives several rivers, besides that of St. Lawrence, and its coasts are pretty even and level. From this lake to that of Huron, there is a communication by means of the river Tanaouate, and by the assistance of a land carriage of six or eight leagues to the river of Toronto, and there is also a passage from it to that of Erie up the river Niagara, though a dreadful cataract renders it necessary to make part of the way by land. The lake of Erie with those of Ontario and Huron form a triangular peninsula. The lake of Erie which lies to the south, is called by the French by the name of Conti; it is 230 leagues in circumference, and every where affords the most delightful prospects, its banks being adorned with oaks, elms, chestnut, walnut, apple and plum trees; and with vines that bear their fine clusters up to the very top. The ground is extremely level, and vast quantities of deer and turkeys are to be found in the woods.

Before

70 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

Before we take leave of this lake, it will be proper to give a particular description of the fall of Niagara. The whole stream of this river runs with prodigious rapidity on its approaching a very deep precipice, whence it falls with a more terrible noise than that of thunder; being interrupted in its descent, by an island which runs along the middle, it rushes from thence into the bed of the river at the bottom, where it raises a mist which rises as high as the clouds, and may be seen at 15 miles distance, when in fine weather it forms a most beautiful rainbow. The rapidity of this river above the descent is so great for near two leagues, that it violently hurries down the wild beasts that endeavour to pass it in order to feed on the other side, casting them down above 150 feet. At the bottom of the cataract, the waters boil, and foam in a surprizing manner, and still continue their course, with great impetuosity, while the banks are so prodigiously high, that a spectator can scarcely look on the water below without trembling. The lake of Huron, which has a communication with that of Erie, is about 400 leagues in circumference, and among several islands has one called Manitoualin, which is about 20 leagues long and 10 broad. On the north-west of this lake is the bay of Toronto, which is about 20 leagues long and 15 broad at its mouth. This bay receives a river that springs from a little lake of the same name, and forms several cataracts. From the above small lake is a passage by land to the river of Tanaouate, which falls into lake Frontinac.

On

On  
chann  
nois la

The  
munic  
that or  
this U  
in circ  
creeks  
aboun  
tempe  
that ab

The  
from F  
of Apr  
of Au  
soon as  
chant  
cargoes  
place c  
where  
maine  
French  
in mon  
lumber  
full lac  
Cape B  
fession,  
for the  
comple  
The  
comput

e, it will be  
 of the fall  
 is river runs  
 approaching a  
 with a more  
 being inter-  
 which runs  
 ce into the  
 e it raises a  
 s, and may  
 ine weather  
 he rapidity  
 eat for near  
 down the  
 in order to  
 own above  
 ct, the wa-  
 nner, and  
 impetuosi-  
 high, that  
 ater below  
 on, which  
 e, is about  
 ng several  
 which is  
 On the  
 Toronto,  
 5 broad at  
 at springs  
 and forms  
 all lake is  
 anaouate,

On

On the north-west of the lake of Huron is a channel that has a communication with the Illinois lake, which is also of considerable extent.

The Superior or Upper Lake, has also a communication with that of Huron, by a channel that on the north-west extends to Huron lake, and this Upper Lake is computed to be 500 leagues in circumference, including the windings of the creeks and little gulphs. All these large lakes abound in fish, and are exposed to storms and tempests. This last has some pretty large islands, that abound with elks and wild asses.

There are two seasons in which ships sailed from France to this country, viz. towards the end of April, or beginning of May, and at the close of August, or the beginning of September. As soon as the vessels arrived at Quebec, the merchant there sent away the greatest part of their cargoes, that were fit for the Indian trade to a place called the Three Rivers, and to Montreal, where they had factors; but the finest goods remained at Quebec, where they were sold to the French themselves. These goods were paid for in money or bills of exchange, and in furs and lumber. The ships however seldom returned full laden, and therefore generally ran down to Cape Breton, when that island was in their possession, and there took in a large quantity of coal for the French sugar islands, where they easily completed their cargoes.

The number of the French in Canada, has been computed, even by themselves, at about 180,000.

## C H A P. II.

*A description of Isle Royal or Cape Breton, now in the possession of the English, and of Louisburg its capital. Of the numerous harbours round the island, and of the produce of the country.*

**T**HIS island was very early discovered by the English, and was always reckoned a part of Nova Scotia, for that very charter which constituted that extensive country a distinct province, included Cape Breton in express terms. This was never disputed till after the treaty of Utrecht; though the French had settled there as well as in Nova Scotia; but by that treaty the French consented to deliver it up to the English; yet notwithstanding queen Anne ordered the duke of Queensbury, her ambassador at the court of France, to declare that she looked upon that island as a part of the ancient territory of Nova Scotia, the French were suffered to keep possession of it, and as they reaped great advantage from its situation, both with respect to the trade of Canady, and the large fisheries carried on at this island, they soon erected fortifications at a very large expence, and the greatest encouragement was given to those who would settle there. However in 1745 it was taken by the New-England men, with very little assistance from Great-Britain, but was given up by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.

That

TH  
Fren  
Nova  
coloni  
late w  
with t  
Englis  
army,  
and a  
cessible  
terwar  
surrend  
made o  
herst, c  
train of  
with 23  
days aft  
masters  
The in  
titated in  
and form  
whence i  
entrance  
which se  
about five  
is called t  
the island  
is not qui  
figure, an  
lakes and  
held toget  
paces in b  
bottom of  
which are

That peace was no sooner concluded than the French distressing our new colony at Halifax in Nova Scotia, and attempting to hem in all our colonies on the continent by a chain of forts, the late war broke out, and Louisburgh, the capital, with the island of Cape Breton, was taken by the English; who landed in the sight of a numerous army, though opposed by a chain of batteries; and after scaling rocks that were thought inaccessible, drove the French from the coast, and afterwards obliged the garrison of Louisburgh to surrender prisoners of war: this conquest was made on the 26th of July, 1758, by general Amherst, commander of 1100 land forces; with the train of artillery; and by admiral Boscawen, with 23 ships of war, besides frigates; and a few days after, a part of the fleet made themselves masters of the island of St. John.

The island of Cape Breton, or Isle Royal, is situated in between 45 and 47° of north latitude, and forms with the island of Newfoundland, from whence it is distant only about 15 leagues, the entrance of the gulph of St. Laurence; the streight which separates Cape Breton from Nova Scotia is about five leagues in length, one in breadth, and is called the passage of Frانسac. The length of the island from the north-east to the south-west is not quite 50 leagues. It is of a very irregular figure, and in such a manner cut through by lakes and rivers, that its two principal parts are held together, only by an isthmus of about 800 paces in breadth; this neck of land separates the bottom of Port Toulouse from several lakes, which are called Labrador. The lakes empty



themselves into the sea to the east, by two channels formed by the islands of Verderromie and la Boularderie.

All its ports open to the east, turning a little to the south, and are within the space of 55 leagues, beginning at Port Dauphin and continuing to Port Toulouse, which is almost at the entrance of the passage of Fronfac. In all other parts it is difficult to find anchorage for small vessels in little creeks or among the islands. The northern coasts are very high and almost inaccessible, and it is difficult to land on the western coast, till you come to the passage of Fronfac, near which, as has been already observed, is Port Toulouse, formerly known by the name of St. Peter. This port is between a kind of gulph called Little St. Peter's, and the island St. Peter, opposite the islands Madame or Maurepas. From thence proceeding towards the south-east is the bay of Gaborie at 20 leagues distance from St. Peter's island. This bay is a league broad, between islands and rocks, and is two leagues deep, but it is not safe to come near the islands. The harbour of Louisburgh, formerly called English Harbour, is not above a league from the above bay, and is perhaps one of the finest in America. It is near four leagues in circumference, and has every where six or seven fathoms water. The entrance is not above 200 fathoms wide, and lies between two small islands. The town of Louisburgh is situated on the south-west side, and is pretty strongly fortified with as much regularity as the situation will admit. It has a good rampart, with irregular bastions, a dry ditch, a covert way, with an excellent glacis, and before

two  
the  
place  
the  
foot  
When  
the 26  
pieces  
ed of  
a toler  
intenda  
brick,  
ings in  
and an  
were m  
high.  
Not to  
farther  
whereof  
which w  
but thou  
tons can  
are got in  
the bay o  
whereof  
about two  
bay is the  
Cape Bre  
The bay  
narrow ne  
is near tw  
leagues wi  
farther you  
enter in ab

by two chan-  
 deronne and  
 rning a little  
 space of 55  
 and continu-  
 at the en-  
 In all other  
 ge for small  
 lands. The  
 most inaccess-  
 the western  
 of Frontac,  
 observed, is  
 the name of  
 nd of gulph  
 d St. Peter,  
 epas. From  
 n-east is the  
 ce from St.  
 e broad, be-  
 ngues deep,  
 and. The  
 iled English  
 n the above  
 in America  
 ce, and has  
 ater. The  
 de, and lie  
 n of Louis-  
 side, and  
 regularly  
 good ram  
 urch, so co  
 and before

## in A M E R I C A.

75

two of the curtains is a ravelin, with a bridge to the sally-ports; but the chief strength of the place consists in the thickness of the walls, and the impassable morasses which extend from the foot of the glacis to a considerable distance. When Louisburgh was taken from the French on the 26th of June, 1758, it was defended by 231 pieces of cannon. At that time the town consisted of only several narrow lanes, and had hardly a tolerable house in it, except the governor's and intendant's, which were built with stone and brick, without the least elegance; the best buildings in the place were the magazines, a convent, and an hospital; and few of the other houses were much better than boarded cottages one story high.

Not to proceed with the coast: two leagues farther is the port de la Saleine, the entrance whereof is very difficult, occasioned by the rocks, which when the sea runs high, lie under water; but though no ships of greater burthen than 300 tons can enter it, these are quite safe when they are got in. At less than two leagues distance is the bay of Penadou or Melanou, the entrance whereof is a league broad, and the bay itself about two leagues deep. Almost opposite to this bay is the island Scarari, formerly called Little Cape Breton, and is above two leagues long. The bay of Mire is separated from it by a very narrow neck of land. The entrance of this bay is near two leagues wide, and runs at least eight leagues within the land, growing narrower the farther you go thro it: however, large ships may enter in about six leagues, and find good anchor-

76 The Discoveries of the FRENCH  
age under cover of the hills; there are also several other small islands and rocks, that may be seen at a great distance.

The bay of Morienne is higher up, and separated from the bay of Mire, by Cape Brule. A little farther is L'île Plate, or L'île a Pierre de Fusil. From hence proceeding about three leagues to the north-west, is a very good harbour for small vessels. Two leagues farther is the Bay des Espagnols, which is about 1000 paces wide at its entrance, but soon growing wider it divides itself into two branches, which may be sailed up for two leagues; and both these branches are excellent ports. From this bay to the lesser entrance of Labrador is a gulph about 20 leagues long, and about three or four wide in its greatest breadth. About four leagues from the Bay des Espagnols, is Port Dauphin, or St. Ann, which has a sure and safe road for ships at its entrance among the islands of Cibou. A neck of land almost entirely covers the port, leaving a passage for no more than one vessel at a time. The port is however near two leagues in circumference, and is of an oval form. Ships may lie here just as they please, for the land and the mountains that surround this bay keep off the winds in such a manner that they are hardly felt.

The sea round the island is subject to violent storms of wind, with snow and sleet, and such fogs that it is frequently impossible to see the length of a ship. But what is still more extraordinary, these fogs will in the space of one fortnight cause over the rigging of ships with such thick ice as to render them impossible to be work-

ed till  
only o  
conqu  
to six  
quanti  
5th of  
been c  
the ad  
numbe  
temper

The  
same w  
more fr  
very in  
prodigi  
timber  
mon for  
cedar,  
beech, a  
fruits,  
and roots  
of grain  
any in C

It is ob  
tivated u  
inclines to  
covered r  
the moun  
the river S  
with coal  
abundance  
There  
particular  
fants, wh

ed till it is beaten off: the quantity beat off from only one of the English ships employed in the last conquest of this island, was computed to amount to six or eight tons weight; yet this amazing quantity was all congealed or the night of the 5th of May, when warmer weather might have been expected. All these circumstances shew the advantages of an island filled with such a number of excellent ports, situated in such a tempestuous sea.

The climate of the island is pretty much the same with that of Quebec, but mists and fogs are more frequent. A great part of the land is but very indifferent, it however produces oaks of a prodigious size, pines for masts, and all sorts of timber fit for carpenters work. The most common sorts are, besides those already mentioned, cedar, oak, ash, maple, aspen, wild cherry, beech, and plane tree. It produces some sorts of fruits, particularly apples, with pulse, herbs, and roots. They have wheat and all other kinds of grain, with some hemp and flax as good as any in Canada.

It is observable that the mountains may be cultivated up to the tops; that the good soil always inclines towards the south, and that the island is covered from the north and north-west winds by the mountains of Nova-Scotia, that border upon the river St. Laurence. These mountains abound with coal, and there is also plaster here in great abundance.

There are here great number of fowl, and particularly partridges, almost as large as pheasants, which they resemble in their feathers.

78 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

The island was full of deer, and had vast numbers of moose-deer but they are now scarce; there are here also animals brought from Europe, as horses, horned cattle, hogs, sheep, goats and poultry. All the lakes, rivers and bays abound with excellent fish in the greatest plenty, and what is got by hunting, shooting, and fishing, is sufficient to maintain the inhabitants a good part of the year. It is said that there is no part of the world where more cod fish is caught, nor such good conveniency for drying it; and the fishery of sea-pike, porpoises, &c. is carried on with great ease.

C H A P. III.

*An account of the settlement made by the French in the Leeward Islands, and their proceedings in them. The situation, extent, produce, and importance of the islands of Martinico, Guadaloupe, Marigalante, Granadi, St. Bartholomew, St. Martin, Santa Cruz, and Deséada; their trade with the northern colonies, and their own directly to France.*

**W**E have already given an account of the settlement of the island of St. Christopher by the English and the French, who lived in the greatest harmony together; of the French flying from that island, upon the landing of the Spaniards; and of the English being driven from their settlements, as well as of the return both of the English and French.

Mr.

had vast num-  
 now scarce;  
 from Europe,  
 p, goats and  
 bays abound  
 plenty, and  
 and fishing; is  
 a good part  
 no part of the  
 ht, nor such  
 and the fishery  
 ed on with

*the French in  
 things in them.  
 importance of  
 be, Mariga-  
 St. Martin,  
 trade with  
 directly to*

unt of the  
 pher by the  
 the great-  
 flying from  
 Spaniards;  
 their settle-  
 of the Eng-

Mr.

Mr. Desnambue the French governor, observ-  
 ing that the English colony had made themselves  
 masters of several of the adjacent islands, resolv-  
 ed to send some of the principal persons in his colo-  
 ny to France to procure supplies, chiefly with a  
 view of settling the island of Gaudaloupe.  
 Among those sent over, was one Mr. Olive, a  
 bold enterprizing man, who had nothing in view  
 but his own interest, and having some notice of  
 the governor's design, he resolved to supplant  
 him: For that purpose he entered into a treaty  
 with one Mr. Du Pleffis, and some other mer-  
 chants of Dieppe; who forming a company for  
 the support of the scheme he had laid, these two  
 were sent over governors with joint authority to  
 the island of Gaudaloupe; where they arrived  
 with about 500 men, on the 8th of June 1635.

However, these governors, in the very begin-  
 ning of their enterprize, committed two mis-  
 takes; they settled on the wrong side of the  
 island, where the soil was very bad, and quarrel-  
 led with the natives, before the colony was well  
 able to subsist without them. The bad conse-  
 quences with which these errors were attended,  
 soon broke the heart of Mr. Du Pleffis; when  
 Mr. Olive being left sole governor, his haughti-  
 ness and pride had certainly brought the colony  
 to ruin, if he had not fallen blind. Upon this,  
 the company sent over Mr. Aubert, a very dis-  
 creet and prudent gentleman, who in a few years  
 time, put the affairs of this colony into order,  
 and so effectually established it, that the inhabi-  
 tants

80 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

tants have subsisted very happily ever since. But notwithstanding Mr. Desnambue's having the misfortune to see Guadaloupe thus taken out of his hands; yet before his death he had the pleasure of settling the island of Martinico, of which he by that means became proprietor, and of leaving it to his family by his last will.

In the mean time, cardinal Richelieu, being raised to the ministry, thought proper to send over a person of distinction, to take upon himself the government of the whole island; and accordingly made choice of Mr. De Poincy, a knight of Malta, whom he sent with the title of governor and lieutenant general of the islands in America.

This gentleman embarked at Dieppe on the 15th of January 1639, and after a short passage, arrived at Martinico, from whence he went to Guadaloupe, and afterwards to St. Christopher's. He was very severe in the execution of his authority against those who were for hastily making estates at the public expence, but was extremely kind to the industrious part of the inhabitants, who were willing to let their private fortunes depend on the flourishing state of the colonies. He caused churches to be built in all these islands, took care to have the priests well maintained, but would have no monasteries or monks. He established an excellent form of justice, granted commissions to privateers, and hanged up pirates with very little ceremony. His concern for the public good was so apparent, that he became in a manner absolute; and the people being sensible that

that he  
obeyed  
short,  
that pa  
though  
happy,  
doing  
own.

How  
in Fran  
the colo  
compan  
De Poin  
pher, St  
Cruz for  
manner  
would g  
brought  
the worl  
the Dut  
were in,  
Middleb  
annually  
islands up

This co  
a new co  
with the  
back from  
proprietor  
having p  
the comm  
own, cham  
ten years,

since. But  
 having the  
 taken out of  
 the plea-  
 of which  
 and of leav-  
 eu, being  
 r to send  
 on himself  
 id accord-  
 knight of  
 governor  
 in Ame-  
 ce on the  
 t passage,  
 e went to  
 stopher's.  
 is autho-  
 making  
 extremely  
 habitants,  
 unes de-  
 ies. He  
 e islands,  
 ned, but  
 He esta-  
 ted coun-  
 tes with  
 the pub-  
 me in a  
 sensible  
 that

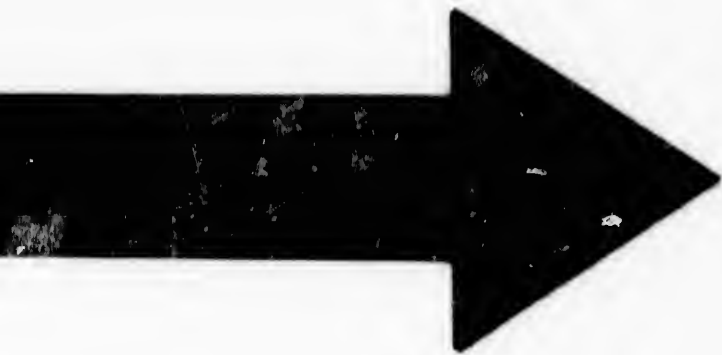
that he had nothing in view but their interest, obeyed his orders with the utmost alacrity. In short, he changed the whole face of affairs in that part of the world, settled desert islands, and though he made hundreds of people rich and happy, contented himself with the pleasure of doing it, without making any fortune of his own.

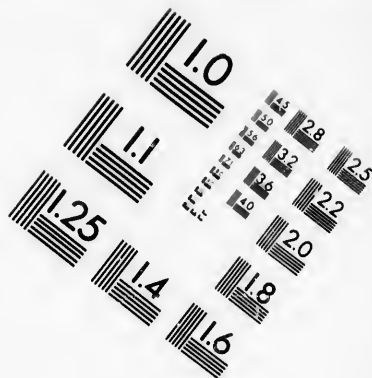
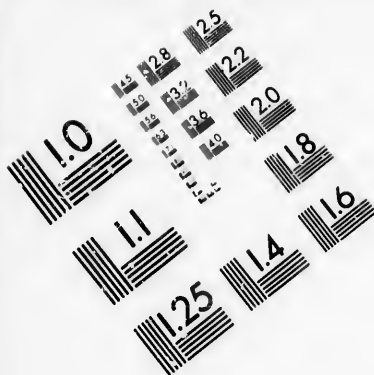
However, during the disturbances that arose in France after the death of cardinal Richelieu, the colony sunk by the ill management of the company; and in the year 1651, the chevalier De Poincy purchased the islands of St. Christopher, St. Bartholomew, St. Martin, and Santa Cruz for the order of Malta; and in the same manner other islands were disposed of to such as would give any thing for them; which soon brought the affairs of the French in that part of the world into a very strange situation. When the Dutch, taking notice of the condition things were in, established magazines at Flushing and Middleburgh for West-India commodities, and annually employed in the trade of the French islands upwards of 100 ships.

This continued till about the year 1664, when a new company being set up in France, they, with the assistance of the government, purchased back from the knights of Malta and the other proprietors, the rights they had acquired; and having put an end to the Dutch trade, brought the commerce of the colonies once more into their own channel. But after possessing their grant ten years, they began to oppress the people, in

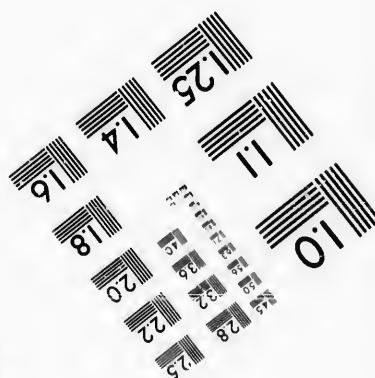
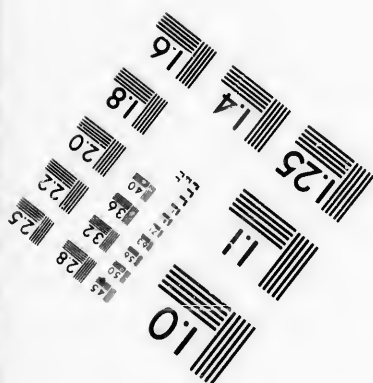
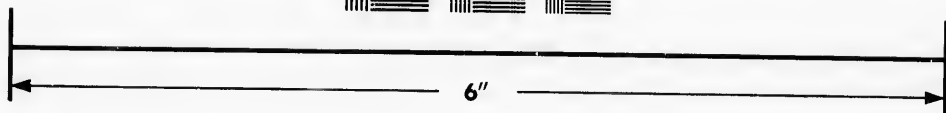
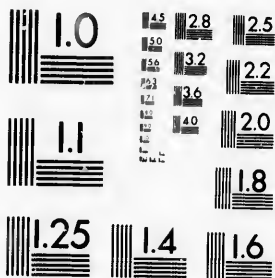








**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503



5

82 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

such a manner that the ministry thought fit to interpose, and in 1680 every thing was settled so as to render the diligent and industrious secure of reaping the fruits of their labours.

After this general view of the manner in which the French islands were settled, we shall proceed to a very concise account of the islands themselves.

Martinico is situated in  $14^{\circ} 30'$  north lat. and in  $61^{\circ}$  west long. It is about 13 leagues in length and seven in breadth. From the inland parts, which are mountainous, fall numerous rivulets, which, after watering the country, flow into the sea. It has several bays well fortified; the chief of which is the great bay of Port Royal the capital of the island, and the bay of St. Pierre, a large town about seven leagues from it to the north-west. This island was inhabited by Indians when the French first attempted a settlement in the year 1635, and many battles were fought between them and the natives with various success; but at last the French overpowered, and cruelly extirpated the ancient inhabitants. The governor of all the Caribbee islands resides there, and it is the seat of the sovereign council, whose jurisdiction extends, not only throughout the Antilles, but over the French settlements in St. Domingo and Tortugo.

This island was, on the 19th of January 1759, attacked by a squadron of ten men of war, besides frigates, &c. under the command of commodore Moore, and a body of land forces, commanded by gen. Hopson; but after obtaining  
some

some  
barked  
ever.  
1762.

Gu  
is situ  
about  
able fo  
It is a  
breadt  
of the  
ship ca  
in a fe  
try to e  
the mo  
citadel  
part to  
French  
1632. I  
the sol  
after wa  
their d  
present  
so much  
the Brit  
rich, an  
that the  
out re-p  
are call  
of Guad  
obliged  
could be  
the Fren

ought fit to  
 as settled so  
 us secure of  
 er in which  
 all proceed  
 and them-  
 th lat. and  
 leagues in  
 the inland  
 umerous ri-  
 ntry, flow  
 t fortified,  
 Port Royal  
 St. Pierre,  
 n is to the  
 l by Indi-  
 settlement  
 ere fought  
 arious suc-  
 vered, and  
 nts. The  
 sides there,  
 cil, whose  
 ghout the  
 ents in St.  
 January  
 en of war,  
 d of com-  
 ces, com-  
 obtaining  
 some

some advantages, the troops and sailors re-em-  
 barked, and sailed to Guadaloupe. It was how-  
 ever, taken by the English on the 13th of Feb.  
 1762.

Guadaloupe, the largest of the Caribbee islands,  
 is situated in 16° north lat. and 61° west long.  
 about 30 leagues from Martinico. It is remark-  
 able for the height of its cliffs and mountains.  
 It is about 15 leagues in length and twelve in  
 breadth, divided into two parts by a small arm  
 of the sea, or narrow passage, through which no  
 ship can venture, and the inhabitants cross over  
 in a ferry from one part to the other. The coun-  
 try to the west is called Basse Terre, where stands  
 the metropolis of the same name, and where the  
 citadel and chief strength of the island lies: the  
 part to the east is called Grande Terre. The  
 French began to settle this island about the year  
 1632, but being unacquainted with the nature of  
 the soil, they were in danger of starving, and  
 afterwards the planters were almost ruined by  
 their divisions; but since the beginning of the  
 present century, the inhabitants have flourished  
 so much, that they make more sugar than any of  
 the British islands, except Jamaica. The soil is  
 rich, and especially at Grande Terre so fertile,  
 that the canes are frequently cut six times with-  
 out re-planting. The far greatest part of what  
 are called Martinico sugars, are the real produce  
 of Guadaloupe, the inhabitants of which are  
 obliged to send them to Martinico, before they  
 could be transported to France. On this account  
 the French fortified it with several forts and re-  
 doubts,

doubts, which were in so good a condition in 1702, when Adm. Bembo made a descent upon it with a considerable body of land forces, that he did not think proper to attack them, but was satisfied with destroying many of their plantations and open villages.

We have already observed, that in 1759, a fleet of ten men of war besides frigates and bomb-ketches, under the command of commodore Moore, with a body of land forces commanded by general Hopson, after making an unsuccessful attack on Martinico, sailed for Guadeloupe. This squadron began to bombard the town and citadel of Belle Terre on the 23<sup>d</sup> of January; the officers and sailors behaved with the utmost intrepidity, and notwithstanding many batteries erected on the shore, the houses and churches were that night every where in flames, and the powder of the magazines blown about the enemies ears. The next day the English landed, and found both the town and citadel abandoned, but the island was far from being taken. The French with their armed negroes threw up intrenchments on the mountains, and bravely resolved to defend themselves as long as possible. Soon after general Hopson dying, the command devolved on major general Barrington. The English were harassed by perpetual alarms, and fatigued with constant duty; they however gained one pass after another, and still advanced, alert in the hour of caution, and invincible whenever they attacked. They frequently suffered from concealed fires out of the woods, and from lurking parties

of armed negroes that could not be discovered. At length the French governor, finding all resistance in vain, sent a flag of truce; and the articles of capitulation, by which Guadaloupe was surrendered to the English, were signed on the first of May 1759.

Within the same month, Marigalante, four little islands called the Santos, Deseda, and Petit Terre also surrendered to the English. Marigalante is about 20 leagues in length, and about 15 in breadth; and is situated in 16 north lat. a little to the south-west of Guadaloupe. The French began to send colonies thither about the year 1647, and after having several wars expelled the natives, and remained in the peaceable possession of this island till May 19, 1759.

Granada is 25 leagues in circumference, and has several good bays and harbours, some of which are fortified. It is situated in 11. 51. north latitude, about 30 leagues south-west of Barbadoes, and about the same distance north of Andalusia.

The smaller Caribbee islands belonging to the French, are St. Bartholomew's, which is about 10 leagues north of St. Christopher's, and was taken in the year 1689, by the English, under the command of sir Timothy Thornhill; but restored to the French at the peace of Ryswick. By the late peace in 1763, Martinico, Gaudaloupe, Marigalante, St. Bartholomew, and Deseda, were restored to France; but Granada, and some small islands near it, called the Granadillas, or Granadines, were ceded to Great-Britain.

As



86 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

As sugar is the staple commodity of these islands, it is proper to give a short account of the quantities raised in them. In Martinico it is computed that the inhabitants make one year with another 10,000 hogsheads of about 600 weight each: In Guadaloupe, are made about 40,000 hogsheads, and in the other islands about 1000 hogsheads altogether. These islands also draw a considerable profit from cacao, or the chocolate nut, and from ginger, cassia, and pimento, which is what is called Jamaica pepper or all-spice, of which they export considerable quantities. The inhabitants also send home rocou for the use of dyers, and a variety of medicinal gums and sweetmeats of several kinds. These islands likewise produce several sorts of valuable woods used in dying, in-laying, and cabinet work; as rose-wood, which when wrought and polished, has a very beautiful appearance, as well as a fine smell. The Indian wood is also of the same nature, and the iron-wood, so called from its excessive hardness, is preferable either to cedar or cypress. They have great quantities of Brasil wood, brasiletto, fustic or yellow wood, and green ebony, which is both used by the cabinet makers and dyers. To these commodities may be added tortoiseshell and raw hides.

But though these islands produce so many rich and valuable commodities, yet they stand in need of very large supplies of various kinds of necessaries, without which they could not possibly subsist, such as horses and cattle of all kinds, dry fish, corn, roots, and all sorts of lumber, of which they

they  
then  
good  
nua  
vres,  
they  
Wes  
  
The m  
St  
hal  
gre  
Don  
Av  
of  
com  
  
**W**  
Domi  
his fir  
paniol  
which  
nour o  
extend  
island v  
well k  
this ill  
cumfer  
be me

ty of these  
count of the  
it is com-  
year with  
600 weight  
out 40,000  
about 1000  
also draw a  
e chocolate  
nto, which  
ll-spice, of  
ries. The  
the use of  
s and wer  
lands like  
oods used  
; as rose  
ed, has a  
ine smell,  
ture, and  
ive hard-  
cypress  
ood, bra-  
n ebony,  
kers and  
dded tor-  
any rich  
d in need  
necessa-  
bly sub-  
ds; dry  
f which  
they

they receive considerable quantities from our northern colonies. Mr. Savary observes, that the goods exported from France to these islands, annually, amounted to about four millions of livres, or near 200,000 l. of our money; for which they brought home nearly double the value in West-India commodities.

#### C H A P. IV.

*The manner in which the French first formed settlements in the islands of Tortuga and Hispaniola or St. Domingo. Their being allowed the possession of half of that island by Spain. The amazing progress of that colony. In what the trade of St. Domingo consists. A description of the little island of Avache, and a more particular one of the island of Cayenne, and of its productions and articles of commerce.*

**W**E shall now proceed to the island of St. Domingo, which was discovered by Columbus in his first voyage in 1492, and called by him Hispaniola; but he afterwards building a city to which he gave the name of St. Domingo, in honour of his father Dominic, the name was first extended to that quarter, and at length the whole island was called St. Domingo; by which it is as well known as by that of Hispaniola. Though this island is reckoned only 400 leagues in circumference, yet if all the creeks, bays, and inlets be measured, it will be found to amount to at least

least 600. It is at present the most fruitful, and much the pleasantest island in the West-Indies; for the forests are of vast extent, and the trees are taller and larger, the fruit more beautiful and better tasted than in the other islands: the savannahs or meadows are also vastly extensive, and contain innumerable herds of black cattle that belong to the country, as also wild horses and wild hogs produced from those animals brought over by the Spaniards. Scarce is there any place in the world better watered, by small brooks and navigable rivers, all of which are full of fish; add to this, that there were at first found great quantities of gold, silver, and copper, which have failed since the destruction of the natives. This with many other reasons concurred at length to induce many of the Spaniards to leave the island, particularly the severity of the government, for the sovereign council of the Indies being established at St. Domingo, the inhabitants were kept within stricter bounds than in other places: the immense riches gained by their countrymen, induced numbers to forsake this island, in hopes of coming in for a share of those treasures: the great demands for people to maintain the Spanish conquests on the continent; their cruelly destroying the Indians, which rendered them unable without fatigue to cultivate their lands; for as yet the use of negroes

\* See the discovery of this island in Columbus's first voyage, and the discoveries of the Spaniards from the death of Columbus to Cortes's expedition. Vol. I. Chap. I.

had not  
descents  
part of  
degrees  
the cou  
Mongol

The  
selves b  
renders.  
no more  
coast o  
killing  
having  
fication  
plantat  
other v  
private  
French  
the Spa  
ons, fre  
reen an  
of peop  
for whi  
provisio  
tears b  
their  
the nur  
time, t  
along  
the me  
ed, and  
was m  
island;

had not reached the Spanish Settlements; and the descents of the English and French on the western part of the island; these several circumstances by degrees induced the Spaniards to abandon all the country between Monte Christo and Cape Mongon.

The manner in which the French settled themselves being very singular, we shall give it our readers. The Buccaneers who were originally no more than hunters, fixed themselves upon the coast of Hispaniola, to enjoy the advantage of killing black cattle, and selling their skins. These having built some villages, erected several fortifications for their defence, while others laid out plantations, in which they raised tobacco and other valuable commodities. Mean while the privateers furnished by commissions from the French governor of Petit Guaves, to cruize upon the Spaniards, with persons on board of all nations, frequently entered the ports, in order to capture and victual their ships; and these three sorts of people became extremely useful to each other; for while the hunters and other settlers furnished provisions and hides in vast quantities, the privateers brought in prizes of great value, and spent their money freely, and by enriching, increased the number of the inhabitants; so that in a short time, the French extended their settlements all along the south-west coast of St. Domingo. In the mean time Tortuga became thoroughly planted, and the tobacco raised there being very good, was most esteemed. With respect to this last island, it is to be observed, that the Buccaneers

had

90 The Discoveries of the FRENCH  
had formed a settlement there, which had been  
destroyed by the Spaniards with inexorable cru-  
elty in the year 1638. However the Buccaneers  
returned, and were re-settled by the English un-  
der capt. Willis, by whose courage and conduct  
they were soon in no fear of being disturbed by  
the Spaniards. But they did not continue long  
in this situation, for Mr. de Poincy sending thi-  
ther Mr. Vasseur, to secure that small island for  
the French, the Buccaneers of that nation, set-  
tled in the island, joined him, and capt. Willes  
was obliged to abandon the place, with the troops  
under his command; but this put the French in  
possession, they were for many years harassed by  
the Spaniards, who more than once drove them  
out of the island, but being constantly supported  
from their own islands, and joined by the adven-  
turers of all nations, they not only effectually  
fixed themselves there, but made the above set-  
tlements at St. Domingo, and in 20 years time  
became so strong that the Spaniards were glad to  
live upon good terms with them.

But to proceed; both the Spaniards and the  
English complained loudly of the conduct of the  
French governors, under colour of whose com-  
missions, the Buccaneers committed great disor-  
ders, and in time of peace, took ships of all nati-  
ons; but the French gave good words, promised  
redress, and suffered the governors to go on after  
their own manner, as they found that it drew  
numbers of people to their settlements, and was  
likely to secure them the western part of St. Do-  
mingo. They however did not gain a legal pos-  
session

session  
1697.  
half o  
which  
across  
the Fr  
Domi  
For  
island  
there  
but up  
of this  
declin  
fell to p  
with so  
came th  
is said  
Indies,  
lings a  
from an  
sioned,  
that val  
the Fre  
is Cape  
has a ve  
well pep  
white, a  
west tide  
gane, w  
sides wh  
towns a  
are com  
mulatto  
ve  
511

ich had been  
 exorable cru-  
 e Buccaneers  
 English un-  
 and conduct  
 disturbed by  
 ontinue long  
 sending thi-  
 ill island for  
 nation, set-  
 apt. Willes  
 of the troops  
 e French in  
 arrassed by  
 drove them  
 supported  
 the adven-  
 effectually  
 above set-  
 years time  
 re glad to  
 s and the  
 uct of the  
 hese com-  
 eat disor-  
 f all nati-  
 promised  
 on after  
 it drew  
 and was  
 f St. Do-  
 gal pos-  
 ession

session of that part of Hispaniola, till the year  
 1697, when the Spaniards yielded to them one  
 half of the island by the treaty of Ryswick, by  
 which the boundaries were fixed by a line drawn  
 across the country from north to south, so that  
 the French enjoy all the western half of St.  
 Domingo.  
 For many years the principal trade of this  
 island consisted in tobacco, in which it is said  
 there have been employed from 60 to 100 ships;  
 but upon the establishment of an exclusive farm  
 of this commodity in France, the trade began to  
 decline, and at last sunk to nothing. They then  
 fell to planting of sugar, and tho' they at first met  
 with some difficulties, yet in a short time it be-  
 came the staple commodity of the island. This  
 is said to be the best sugar made in the West  
 Indies, and generally sells for three or four shil-  
 lings a hundred more than the sugar brought  
 from any of their other islands; which has occa-  
 sioned a surprising progress in the cultivation of  
 that valuable commodity. The principal place  
 the French possess on the north side of the island  
 is Cape Francois, which is happily situated and  
 has a very good port. The town is large and  
 well peopled, and is supposed to contain 4000  
 white, and as many negro inhabitants. On the  
 west side, they have the town and port of Beau-  
 gane, which is the seat of the government, be-  
 sides which they have several other considerable  
 towns and good ports. The number of people  
 are computed at 30,000 whites and 100,000  
 mulattos. Sugar

92 The Discoveries of the FRENCH

Sugar has been so greatly cultivated by the French, that in the year 1726 they had 200 sugar works in the island, which were computed to yield one with another 400 hogsheads of sugar every year, each hoghead containing about 500 weight; so that it appears from this computation, that the sugar of this island is annually worth about 200,000*l*. and the French indigo brought from thence, is said to produce near half as much. They also raise cacao, ginger and cotton; coffee grows there very well, and some maintain that cinnamon, clove, and nutmeg trees, might be raised there; but the great profit the inhabitants at present make of their sugar and indigo prevents their attempting new improvements. Corn has been sown there, but is said to ripen at different times, so that it is unprofitable, and though their grapes are very fine, yet they are said to be fit for making neither wine nor raisins. Indeed the government discourages the raising either, alleging that if France takes off all the sugar and indigo, it is but reasonable that this colony should take corn and wine from France.

On the south side of the French part of St. Domingo is Avache, a little Island at about twelve leagues distance from the continent. It is only about eight leagues in compass, but it has a very good soil, and two or three tolerable ports, one of which it capable of receiving ships of 300 tons. It lies very conveniently for carrying on a trade with the Spanish colonies on the continent of America.

Cayenne, an island situated in 5° north latitude and in 53° west longitude, was settled by the

the  
cont  
par  
Cay  
nam  
and  
As i  
seem  
pal c  
Mati  
man  
the r  
and  
parts  
on th  
ral p  
grou  
in the  
Th  
long r  
the se  
and h  
grou  
inhabi  
gnats,  
min, v  
ngreca  
canes,  
yield v  
or pin  
ebony,  
cotton,  
and Eu  
anima

cultivated by the  
 had 200 su-  
 re computed to  
 leads of sugar  
 ing about 500  
 computation,  
 annually worth  
 indigo brought  
 half as much.  
 cotton; coffee  
 mainrain that  
 es, might be  
 e inhabitants  
 d indigo pre-  
 ments. Corn  
 ripen at dif-  
 , and though  
 e said to be  
 ins. Indeed  
 g either, al-  
 e sugar and  
 olony should  
 part of St.  
 bout twelve  
 It is only  
 has a very  
 ports, one  
 of 300 tons.  
 on a trade  
 ntainent of  
 north lati-  
 settled by  
 the

the French, in the year 1625. It lies close to the  
 continent of Guiana, from whence it is only se-  
 parated by the rivers Ovia on the east, and the  
 Cayenne on the west, from which last it takes its  
 name. It is 18 or 20 leagues in circumference,  
 and is about seven leagues long and three broad.  
 As it stands high on the coast, it at a distance  
 seems part of the continent. It has three prin-  
 cipal capes, those of Fort St. Lewis, Saperon, and  
 Matiuri, and its banks are mostly covered with  
 mangroves, which grow in salt water, and from  
 the roots other trees rise up without end, so close  
 and interwoven with each other, that, in some  
 parts of the island, a man may walk several miles  
 on them without touching the ground. In sever-  
 al parts there is much meadow and pasture  
 ground, but the rest is low and marshy, especially  
 in the middle, so as to be almost impassable.

The island is rendered uncomfortable by the  
 long rainy season which happens every year; by  
 the scorching close air, both by day and night,  
 and by the vapours exhaled from the swampy  
 grounds, which occasion many disorders. The  
 inhabitants are also continually tormented with  
 gnats, flies, worms, ants, bugs, and other ver-  
 min, which altogether render the place very dis-  
 agreeable. The soil produces plenty of sugar  
 canes, which, though small and short-jointed,  
 yield very plentifully. It also abounds in ananas,  
 or pine-apples, oranges, lemons, figs, papaias,  
 ebony, and violet wood, and also in indigo and  
 cotton, as well as in several sorts of American  
 and European grain. The principal four-footed  
 animals for food are, hogs, wild boars, deer, and  
 hares;



hares; for large cattle can scarce live there. The fowl are, carrion turkeys, cocks and hens, flamingos, which are an exceeding tall bird, and appears in flocks like wild geese; large wild ducks with red tufts on their heads; pigeons, ring-doves, wood-cocks, ortolans, nightingales, parrots, paroquets, and other birds; but the inhabitants chiefly subsist on turtle. Among the reptiles there are lizards, camelions, and serpents of a monstrous size, some of which are said to be above 25 feet long. There are also many small ones.

The principal town is also called Cayenne, and stands on the west part of the island in an advantageous situation, nature and art having equally contributed to fortify it. The fortifications are an irregular hexagon, and consist of a dry ditch, and a rampart with several batteries mounted with cannon, within which stand above 200 houses, formed into two streets. On the north-east part of the town, the jesuits have a little chapel that stands in an open place, and has before it a grove of lemon-trees. On a pretty steep eminence is the fort of St. Lewis de Caperoux on the sea side, mounted with 42 iron guns, and commonly defended by four companies of regular troops. The weakest places of the island are also defended by batteries.

The next town in the island is Armire, which is about three leagues distant to the eastward, but is small and thinly peopled: the Jesuits have however a chapel there. These are the most remarkable towns in the island.

The poorer sort, besides turtle, eat the flesh of the manatee or sea-cow, which is brought ready salted from the river of the Amazons, whither several of the principal inhabitants send barks, to buy it of the Indians for beads, knives, linen, toys, and iron tools. The men in these barks take salt with them, and on their entering the river of the Amazons, the Indians employed in the manatee fishery go on board, and having taken the salt, run up the river in canoes, to catch the manatees, which they cut in pieces, and having salted them, return to their barks.

The trade carried on with France, chiefly consists in provisions, as salt-meat, flour, wine, brandy, linen, stuffs, shoes, and other wearing apparel, tools, and small wares; in return for which they export sugar, dying woods, and for the most part the same kind of commodities as the leeward islands. The number of whites, exclusive of the soldiers, are said to amount to about 1500, and the whole number of people, including the soldiers and slaves, is said to be about 3000.

C H A P.

The

## C H A P. V.

*Mr. De la Salle attempts to discover the great river Mississippi, and is murdered by his own soldiers: its being afterwards settled by M. d'Ibberville, and the affair turned into a bubble. A description of the river Mississippi and its banks, and of the present situation of the adjacent countries lately in the possession of the French.*

SOME of the French had already proceeded from the rivers and lakes of Canada, to the river Mississippi, when Mr. Robert Cavalier de la Salle, conceived the design of finding out a passage from the gulph of Mexico to the South-Sea, by means of the river Mississippi; for though this great river does not run that way, he was in hopes that by sailing up it, he should discover one that did. In pursuance of this plan he laid his proposals before the French king; when his project being approved, he was supplied with four vessels, a man of war of 56 guns, a large fly-boat, a small frigate, and a ketch. This Squadron was commanded by Mr. Beaujeau, who was victualled for a year, and Mr. de la Salle had under his command 150 land men, who were to settle in the country, and twelve gentlemen volunteers; it being proposed to plant a colony and build a good fort in the gulph of Mexico, which was to serve both as a magazine, and as a place of retreat, in case of misfortunes either by sea or land.

With

W  
 Roche  
 by M  
 viston  
 ketch  
 the Sp  
 about  
 of Spi  
 league  
 mistoc  
 called  
 he fou  
 presty  
 tempti  
 the pit  
 marine  
 bur the  
 fly-boa  
 Mr.  
 being i  
 ing on  
 prevent  
 natives  
 ately p  
 noise al  
 Mr. de  
 the calu  
 went a  
 ing ente  
 presents  
 \* Th  
 of the M

With this Squadron Mr. de la Salle sailed from Rochelle on the 5th of August 1684, and passing by Martinico and Guadalupe, took in fresh provisions and water, with several volunteers. The ketch being separated by a storm, was taken by the Spaniards, but the other three vessels arrived about the middle of February 1685, in the bay of Spirito Santo, and at about the distance of ten leagues found a large bay, which Mr. de la Salle mistook for the right arm of the Mississippi, and called it St. Lewis\*. Having sounded this bay, he found it deep but narrow, and therefore expressly forbid the captain of the fly-boat's attempting to enter it, without his having on board the pilot of the frigate, who was an experienced mariner, and to unload his guns into the pinnace; but the captain neglecting these orders, ran the fly-boat upon the sands, where she stuck fast.

Mr. de la Salle was at this time on shore, and being in pain for the safety of the vessel, was going on board in order to save her, when he was prevented by the appearance of about 120 of the natives advancing to attack him. He immediately put his men in a posture of defence, but the noise alone of his drums put the Indians to flight. Mr. de la Salle then following them, presented the calumet of peace, which they accepted, and went along with him to his camp; where having entertained them, he sent them back with some presents. With this treatment they were so well pleased,

\* The bay of St. Lewis is 100 miles to the west of the Mississippi.

pleased, that the next day they returned his civility, by bringing provisions, and concluding an alliance with him, which might have proved a great advantage, had it not been interrupted by an accident. For as they were unloading the fly-boat in order to endeavour to get her off the sands, a pack of blankets fell into the sea, and was driven on shore by the waves. This being found by the Indians, Mr. de la Salle sent to demand it in a very civil manner; but they shewed some reluctance at parting with it, the officer rashly threatened to kill them, unless they restored it immediately. At this they were both frightened and incensed, and resolving to be revenged for the affront, assembled in the night in order to attack the camp. The sentinel being asleep, they advanced as near as they pleased, and discharging their arrows, killed four officers, and wounded two of the gentlemen volunteers, upon which the French running to their arms, fired upon them, and put them to flight, though none of them were wounded; but the next day they killed two of Mr. de la Salle's men, whom they found asleep.

In the mean time the fly-boat was unloaded but was too far sunk to be got off. At length Mr. Beaujeau seeing all the goods and merchandize landed, and the fort almost finished, sailed for France, and Mr. de la Salle having left 100 men under the command of Mr. de Moranger his nephew, marched with the remainder, who amounted to 50 persons, into the country in order to discover the Mississippi.

He had there the mortification to find that the only vessel he had on board was a canoe, and that t

In the  
advan  
canno  
dians  
ot them  
being no  
them, rel  
oblige  
theref  
th of Q  
pieces of  
om the  
anced fa  
ter seve  
ounded  
with man  
e had ore  
one of h  
delightful  
one on f  
be, in, w  
meadow  
d by the  
nd this a  
reat conf  
Howeve  
gain with  
mouth of  
ow rende  
nding wh  
rtified a  
is men, r  
discovery.  
nd that t

In the mean time, a new fort was built in a yet more advantageous post, defended by twelve pieces of cannon, and the old fort destroyed; but the Indians still killing the French, whenever they got near them in their power, and Mr. de la Salle, seeing no method of concluding an alliance with them, resolved to make war upon them in order to oblige them to come to an accommodation. He therefore set out again from the fort on the 15th of October, with 60 stout men, armed with pieces of wood on their breasts to defend them from the arrows of the Indians. He had not advanced far, before he found them encamped, and after several skirmishes, in which he killed and wounded a great number of them, he returned very pleased, and with many prisoners. He then found that though he had ordered the captain of the frigate to suffer one of his men to land, yet pleased with the delightful appearance of the country, he had come on shore with six of his best men, in a canoe, in which leaving their arms, they went into a meadow, where falling asleep, they were killed by the Indians, who broke the canoe in pieces, and this accident had put the whole colony into great consternation.

However, at length, Mr. de la Salle set out again with 20 men, in order to discover the mouth of the river Mississippi: continual rains now rendered the ways very bad; but at length finding what he imagined to be that river, he fortified a post on its bank, and leaving part of his men, returned to the fort, delighted with his discovery. He had there the mortification to find that the frigate, the only vessel he had left,

and in which he intended to sail to St. Domingo for fresh supplies, had, by the negligence of the pilot, run a-ground, and was dashed to pieces, by which all his men were drowned, except the Sieur Chefdeville, the captain, and four sailors, and all the goods, provisions and tools lost.

Their affairs being thus ruined, they had no other way to return to Europe than by that of Canada. Mr. de la Salle therefore resolved to undertake that dangerous Journey with 20 men, and an Indian called Nicana, who had formerly attended him into France, and had given him the greatest proofs of his affection. Mr. Cavalier, Mr. Moranger, and father Anastasius, also desired to be of the company. They took with them powder and shot, a quantity of glass beads, and two kettles for boiling their meat, and then set out in order to find the Illinois river.

Having marched for three days to the north-east, they entered a fine campaign country, and were met by several men on horseback, with boots, spurs, and saddles, which shewed they had some communication with the Spaniards. They then marched two days over vast meadows, where they saw such numbers of wild cows, that the smallest herds consisted of about 400. Ten of these cattle they killed, and stopping to rest themselves for two days dressed their meat, that it might serve them for the remainder of their journey. Mr. de la Salle here altered his course and marched directly to the eastward. One day Nicana the Indian crying out that he was bit by a rattle snake, and was a dead man, they immediately

to St. Domingo  
 intelligence of the  
 shed to pieces  
 ed, except the  
 and four sailors,  
 tools lost.

they had no  
 an by that of  
 e resolved to  
 with 20 men,  
 had formerly  
 given him the  
 Mr. Cavalier,  
 is, also desir  
 ok with them  
 s beads, and  
 and then fer

to the north  
 country, and  
 eback, with  
 hewed the  
 Spaniards  
 ft meadows  
 icows, that  
 400. Ten  
 ing to re  
 meat, that  
 der of their  
 his course

One day  
 was bit by  
 they imme-  
 diately

diately gave him some Orvietan, and having sca-  
 rified the wound, applied to it the salt of yipers,  
 by which he was recovered; but this accident  
 made him stop for several days.

At length passing through a most delightful  
 country, they came to the settlements of the Ceniz,  
 one of the largest and most populous nations in  
 America. These extended 20 leagues in length,  
 and all that space was interspersed with hamlets.  
 Among these people they found several things  
 which they must have obtained from the Spani-  
 ards, as pieces of eight, silver spoons, cloaths,  
 and horses, particularly a bull from the Pope  
 exempting the Spaniards of New Mexico, from  
 fasting in summer; horses were so common  
 among them, that they exchanged one for an axe,  
 and from these people they learned that the Spa-  
 niards resided at the distance of six days jour-  
 ney.

Having staid several days among the Ceniz,  
 they continued their march through the country  
 of the Nassonis, where Mr. de la Salle, and Mr.  
 Moranger his nephew, being seized with a vio-  
 lent fever, they were obliged to stay two months;  
 which disappointed all their measures. Though  
 they had not advanced above 150 leagues in a di-  
 rect line, their powder was almost spent, some  
 of the men had deserted to the Indians, and others  
 were ready to follow them; which Mr. de la  
 Salle considering, resolved to turn back to Fort  
 Lewis, and this resolution being approved by the  
 whole body, they marched back to their camp,  
 where they arrived on the 17th of October 1686,



102 The Discoveries of the FRENCH  
and were received with the greatest joy by their  
companions.

Mr. de la Salle having staid two months at the  
fort, during which he caused new entrenchments  
to be made, and took all possible precautions for  
the security of the colony, set out again with 20  
men, his brother, his two nephews, father Anastasius,  
and the Sieur Joutel, with a resolution  
not to return till he had found the Illinois river.  
He began his march on the 11th of January  
1687, and having crossed several rivers that were  
much swelled with rains, came into a fine hunt-  
ing country, where he and his company staid se-  
veral days to refresh themselves. He there sent  
out Mr. Moranger his nephew, his valet, and se-  
ven or eight men to a place where Nicana, the  
faithful Indian, had laid up a stock of beef, in  
order to get it smoked and dryed, that they might  
carry it along with them, to prevent their being  
obliged to retard their journey by frequently  
hunting for provisions; but Mr. Moranger, the  
valet, and Nicana, never returned, they being  
murdered by some of the Frenchmen, who had  
plotted their destruction.

Mr. de la Salle being at two leagues distance  
from the place where these murders were com-  
mitted, was surprized at his nephew's not return-  
ing, and apprehending his being seized by the  
Indians, desired father Anastasius to go with him  
in search of his nephew, taking two Indians along  
with them. When they had got about two  
leagues, they observed some of the French by the  
water-side, and going up to them, enquired for  
Mr. Moranger, on which they pointed to the  
place

place  
hid in  
throug  
who v  
duct,  
Fath  
offices  
search  
whom  
lowed  
having  
joined  
the con  
these  
fiastios  
The m  
leader,  
him, a  
ed, an  
murde  
Upo  
them r  
on wh  
while t  
no soon  
Joutel,  
and ty  
proced  
ramber  
distant  
which  
fort wit  
whence  
for Fra  
valq

ft joy by their  
months at the  
entrenchments  
precautions for  
again with 20  
father Anaf-  
a resolution  
Illinois river.  
of January  
ers that were  
a fine hunt-  
any flaid fe-  
de there sent  
alet, and fe-  
Nicana, the  
k of beef, in  
t they might  
t their being  
frequently  
branger, the  
they being  
n, who had  
ues diftance  
were com-  
not return-  
zed by the  
o with him  
dians along  
about two  
nch by the  
quired for  
ed to the  
place

place where he lay; and two of the villains lying hid in the grass, one of them shot Mr. de la Salle through the head. Thus died this gentleman, who was distinguished by his bravery, and conduct, and deserved a much better fate.

Father Anastasius having performed the last offices for this unhappy gentleman, went in search of Mr. Cavalier, Mr. de la Salle's brother, whom he found in a hut, and was soon after followed by the murderers, who rudely entered, and having seized all they could find, were soon after joined by the rest of those who had engaged in the conspiracy. It was agreed to save the lives of these gentlemen on account of their being ecclesiastics, and to proceed to the nation of the Cenis. The murderer of Mr. de la Salle was chosen their leader, but soon after a contest arising between him, and one Hans, a German, the party divided, and Hans taking his opportunity, shot the murderer to the heart.

Upon their arrival among the Cenis, they found them ready to march against their enemies; upon which Hans and several others joined them, while the rest staid in the country; but they were no sooner gone than father Anastasius, the Sieur Joutel, and some others having procured horses and two Indians for their guides, set out and proceeding to the north-east, on the 5th of September, reached the mouth of the river Illinois, distant 100 leagues from Fort Crevecoeur, to which they proceeded, and were received at the fort with the greatest respect by the commander; whence being conducted to Quebec, they sailed for France on the 20th of August 1688.

About

About seven years after, Mr. d'Ibberville, who had already performed great things, undertook to execute what Mr. de la Salle had promised, and being encouraged by the court, carried over a number of people to the mouth of the Mississippi, where he founded the first colony the French ever had on that river. He provided the men with every thing necessary for their subsistence, and having erected a strong fort for their protection against the Indians, returned to France, in order to obtain supplies. The king being extremely pleased with his success, promised him all the assistance he could desire, and he was soon in a condition to put to sea again. His second voyage was as fortunate as the first; but he fell sick, and died as he was preparing for the third, which might have proved of fatal consequence to the colony, had it not been for the generosity and public spirit of a private gentleman, who having received from the government authority to act, undertook to support it at his own expence.

In the grant of Louisiana made to Mr. Crouzat by Lewis XIV. in the year 1712, it is said to be bounded by the river and lake of Illinois on the north; by New Mexico on the west; by the gulph of Mexico on the south; and by Carolina on the east; though indeed the west part of this country belongs to the Spaniards; and the east to the English, who by the patents the latter have obtained from the crown, are empowered to extend the plantations of Carolina as far to the westward as they think proper.

Mr. Crouzat's grant did not subsist long; for there being a necessity of having some plausible pretence

pretence for  
France,  
thought t  
pains wer  
a place  
might be  
might be  
this purpo  
pany, to  
prevailed  
the noise  
and, the  
banks of  
wealth th  
ble shoo  
for the b  
in Engla  
The R  
sometim  
in the no  
to the f  
south, a  
till it fa  
latitude  
ed into  
four or  
both fr  
authors  
is navig  
source;  
English  
stream,  
obstruc

ville, who  
undertook  
promised,  
carried over  
Mississip-  
the French  
the men  
subsistence,  
ir protec-  
rance, in  
being ex-  
fised him  
was soon  
is second  
ut he fell  
the third,  
quence to  
osity and  
o having  
y to act,  
ce.  
Crouzat  
aid to be  
is on the  
by the  
Carolina  
t of this  
e east to  
er have  
l to ex-  
he west-  
ng, for  
lausible  
pretence

pretence for changing the face of public affairs in France, the settlement of this country was thought the most convenient, and all imaginable pains were taken to represent it as a paradise, and a place from whence inexhaustible treasures might be drawn, provided due encouragement might be obtained from the government. For this purpose it was necessary to erect a new company, to make way for which Mr. Crouzat was prevailed upon to resign his grant. Hence arose the noise that was made about the Mississippi, and the romantic stories of the fertility of the banks of that great river, and the incredible wealth that would flow from thence. This bubble shook the credit of France, and made way for the bubbles formed by the south sea company in England.

The Mississippi, or river of St. Lewis, as it is sometimes called, is said by the French to rise in the north-west part of Canada, taking its course to the south-east, but in  $45^{\circ}$ . turns almost due south, and in that direction continues its course till it falls into the gulph of Mexico in  $30^{\circ}$ . north latitude, and  $95^{\circ}$ . of west longitude. It is swelled into a very large deep river by the streams of four or five considerable rivers that fall into it, both from the east and west; and some French authors maintain, that it has a gentle stream and is navigable for large vessels, almost up to its source; but other French writers as well as some English seamen, affirm, that it has a very rapid stream, that in several parts it has cataraacts which obstruct its navigation, and that there are such shoals

shoals at its mouth, that large ships cannot approach it. In short this river is full of islands, which being filled with trees, look like groves rising out of the water, and afford a very agreeable prospect. And on its banks are woods, meadows, and hills.

The soil in the neighbourhood of the Mississippi is extremely various, being in some places barren, and in others extraordinary fruitful, and naturally abounds with the same plants and animals as Georgia, Carolina and Virginia. Much noise has been made about the silver mines in this country, and the probability of finding those of gold; but some persons who have been sent from France to make trial of the mines, reported that they are far from being valuable, and that it would be very difficult, if not impracticable, to work them. The principal produce of this country exported to Europe are furs, raw hides, and tobacco.

The French divided this extensive country into nine provinces, in each of which they had some small posts; but the only place they possessed of any consequence was New Orleans, seated in a very fruitful part of the country, about 120 miles from the mouth of the Mississippi, where the inhabitants raise corn enough for their own subsistence, and a small quantity of tobacco. The number of people settled in this extensive country is computed by some French authors to amount to 12,000.

As this extensive country extends as far as Canada, on the back of our settlements, they imagined

E N C H

... cannot ap-  
... all of islands,  
... ke groves ri-  
... very agreea-  
... woods, mea-

... he Mississip-  
... e places bar-  
... ful, and na-  
... and animals  
... Much noise  
... nes in this  
... ng those of  
... n sent from  
... orted that  
... nd that it  
... ficable, to  
... this coun-  
... nides, and

... untry into  
... had some  
... puffed of  
... ated in a  
... 20 miles  
... re the in-  
... n substi-  
... he num-  
... untry is  
... ount to  
... as Ca-  
... ey ima-  
... gined

gined it impossible to drive us out of all the conti-  
nent of America, and for that purpose gradually  
erected forts still nearer and nearer to the Eng-  
lish; but by the blessing of divine providence on  
the vigorous measures taken by Great-Britain, all  
their schemes have been rendered abortive; and  
as, since the last peace, the French resigned this  
country, to which they had given the name of  
Louisiana to the Spaniards, they are not now  
possessed of a foot of land on the continent of  
North-America.

... ally advanced with the late peace  
... is Georgia, Carolina and Virginia  
... has been made about the middle of the  
... and the probability of finding those  
... but some persons who have been sent from  
... France to make trial of this mine, reported that  
... they are far from being valuable and that  
... would be very difficult to get impurities  
... work them. The principal product of this  
... is exported to Europe and has been  
... The French divided this extensive country  
... into provinces, each of which they had  
... small posts, which they only pick they possessed  
... any convenience was New-Orleans, seated in  
... very fruitful part of the country, about 120 miles  
... from the mouth of the Mississippi, where the in-  
... habitants raise corn enough for their own subsist-  
... ence, and a small quantity of tobacco. The in-  
... habitants settled in this extensive country  
... to maintain their families to amount to

THE

... as  
... the  
... the  
... the  
... the  
... the

T H E

Discoveries and Settlements

O F T H E

DUTCH IN AMERICA.

C H A P. I.

*The manner in which Surinam was taken by the Dutch. The commodities brought from thence, with a description of the country, and particularly of its fruits and plants, as the Papaya, the Accajou apple, pete and vanilla; with a concise account of the animals and other productions, and of the manners of the Indian inhabitants.*

**T**H E most considerable of the Dutch settlements on the continent is that of Surinam, which they took from the English. We have already given an account of the expeditions of Sir Walter Raleigh, and other persons to Guiana, and it must here be observed, that after the restoration, the Ld. Willoughby, who was governor of Barba-

does,  
Charl  
settle  
they  
they  
discre  
was p  
Cape  
Englis  
ver M  
Surina  
300 to  
had th  
Corrou  
leagues  
settled  
landers  
pulled  
with c  
war bre  
with th  
neutral  
not cont  
In the  
proyoke  
ken from  
America  
commo  
300 me  
Zealand  
Cayenne  
Surinam  
under E  
without

does, obtained a grant of this country from King Charles II. and actually made a considerable settlement on the river of Surinam, which they might have possessed much longer than they did, had it not been for their own indiscretion. About that time the coast of Guiana was possessed by three European nations, from Cape Orange almost to the river Oroonoko. The English had a small colony and redoubt on the river Marony, but their chief settlement was at Surinam river, which was so deep, that ships of 300 tons might run 20 leagues up. The French had the island of Cayenne, and the rivers of Ovia, Corrou, and Sinemary, which last is about 53 leagues east of Surinam; and the Dutch were settled about the river Aproague, while the Zealanders possessed the river Berbiche, and had repulsed the English, who had attacked them there, with considerable loss. When the first Dutch war broke out, in which the French took part with the Republic, both those nations desired a neutrality in those parts, but the English would not consent to it.

In the year 1666 the States of Zealand being provoked at the English having invaded and taken from them all the lands they had possessed in America, except about the river Berbiche, sent commodore Creiffen, with four ships of war, and 300 men to attack Surinam. He sailed from Zealand the latter end of January, arrived at Cayenne in March, and from thence steered for Surinam. He sailed three leagues up the river under English colours to the fort of Paramorbo, without being taken for an enemy: when being

H

disce-

ements

RICA.

taken by the  
from thence,  
and particularly  
a, the Acca-  
a concise ac-  
tions, and of

Dutch settle-  
am, which  
ve already  
Sir Walter  
na, and it  
estoration,  
of Barba-  
does,



discovered for want of signals, the fort began to fire on his ships, which he answered with broadsides from all the vessels, and immediately landed his forces. The English who had lived for a long time in profound security, found themselves too weak to make a defence on the land side, and the settlements being dispersed along the river for 30 leagues up, the fort could receive no succour but by water, where the Zealanders were masters. The English therefore capitulated, that all the inhabitants of the river Surinam and Kamomique, who should take an oath of fidelity to the states of Zealand, should enjoy the peaceable possession of their estates. But the houses, &c. belonging to the lord Willoughby, and to those who absented themselves, were to be forfeited; that all foreigners who had no estates should remain prisoners of war, and all the English deliver up their arms.

This capitulation being executed, commodore Creiffen put the most valuable part of the plunder on board a fly boat, took the prisoners on board a man of war, then after causing the fort to be repaired and put in a posture of defence, left it in the possession of the Sieur de Rome, and then sailed for the islands. Afterwards when the peace was concluded at Breda, it was agreed that the Dutch should keep Surinam; and, in return, the English should keep the possession of New-York, which was then called the New Netherlands.

While this settlement of Surinam was in our hands, we made but very little advantage of it, however it was attended with very small expence

as the  
the nat  
are upo  
to keep  
son; an  
limits o  
give the

The  
nam, a  
cotton,  
negroes  
part of

Resid  
biche,  
tance fr  
raise th  
Berbich  
city of  
lane, fr  
there u  
with th  
of merc

Surin  
situated  
west lo  
many  
lands,  
but the  
The so  
wards t  
veral fo  
year ro  
time, a  
for the

fort began to  
l with broad-  
diately land-  
d lived for a  
d themselves  
and side, and  
g the river for

no succour  
vere masters  
, that all the  
d Kamornio  
delity to the  
peaceable pos-  
uses, &c. be-  
to those who  
ited; that all  
remain pri-  
liver up their

commodore  
of the plun-  
prisoners on  
using the for-  
of defence  
e Rome, and  
ds when the  
s agreed that  
d, in return  
ion of New-  
New Nether-

n was in our  
antage of it  
small expence

as the English were upon very good terms with the natives, with whom the Dutch were, and still are upon so bad a footing, that they are obliged to keep up a strong fort secured by a good garrison; and if any Dutchmen venture out of the limits of their settlements, the Indians are sure to give them no quarter.

The commodities raised by the Dutch at Surinam, are sugar, indigo, ginger, tobacco, and cotton, for the cultivation of which, they have negroes from their colonies in Africa, where a part of their goods is also taken off.

Besides this settlement, they have Boron, Berbiche, and Approwack, situated at a small distance from each other, where for the most part raise the same commodities as at Surinam. At Berbiche however, beside an extraordinary quantity of cotton, they prepare a rich dye called orlane, from an herb of the same name; and being there upon good terms with the Indians, trade with them for provisions, hides, and other kinds of merchandize.

Surinam, the capital of these settlements, is situated in  $6^{\circ} 30'$  north latitude, and in  $56^{\circ}$  west longitude from London. The country is in many parts thinly peopled, especially the low lands, which are often overflowed by the rivers; but the upper hilly countries are very populous. The soil is well watered; the air cooler than towards the coast, and the hills rich in mines of several sorts. All kinds of grain grow there all the year round, (except wheat) coming up in a short time, and with little or no distinction of seasons; for there being no winter, the trees are always

green and full of leaves, blossoms, and fruit, which is very plentiful and good. Though this country lies within the torrid zone, the climate is pretty temperate, and the air wholesome; the heats being generally allayed by a fresh easterly wind, which reigns in the day during the greatest part of the year; and at night the land breezes prevail, but do not reach above two or three leagues out at sea. The waters are also excellent, and are found by experience to keep sweet during the longest voyages. On the sea coasts, which are generally low, are many large islands, fit for feeding of cattle.

Among the fruits of this country are the bread fruit, tamarinds, papayas, accajou apples, and many other tropical fruits.

The papaya is produced on a tall slender tree or shrub, with large leaves, somewhat resembling those of the vine; the tree is hollow and grows fifteen feet high in one year. The fruit is thick and round, and in taste has some resemblance to a cucumber.

The accajou apple is long, thick, and of an orange red: it has a sharp taste, and is commonly eaten baked. At the end of the fruit is a green nut, much in the shape of a little sheep's kidney, the kernel has the taste of a filbert, the shell is oily, and on the skin being touched with this oil, it is stained black, so as not to rub off in a long time. This oil is of a medicinal and laxative nature; the stem of the tree on which this fruit grows, resembles that of a chefnut, and the leaves are like those of the bay; its wood, which is very

very fine  
hold go  
piragua  
long.

This  
pete an  
indigo,  
which  
whose  
order t  
that m  
but th  
long s  
allowe

The  
the sam  
green,  
it has  
gins to  
ter, an  
which  
liquors

This  
physic  
ous fo  
cabinet  
ent kin

Here  
rious k  
Indian  
large e  
are of  
ing, b  
they ca

s, and fruit,

Though this  
the climate is

olefome; the  
fresh easterly

ng the great-  
e land breezes

two or three  
also excellent,

sweet during  
coasts, which

lands, fit for

are the bread  
apples, and

all slender tree  
at resembling

w and grows  
fruit is thick

semblance to

, and of an

is commonly

it is a green  
ep's kidney,

the shell is  
with this oil,

off in a long  
nd laxative

ch this fruit  
d the leaves

d, which is  
very

very fine, is proper for making all sorts of household goods, and of this the Indians form their piraguas, which are commonly 40 or 50 feet long.

This country also produces vanillas, tobacco, pete and rocou, Indian wheat, mandioka, cotton, indigo, and several other useful plants, among which cotton is most cultivated by the Indians, whose women spin it as fine as they please in order to adorn themselves. The pete is an herb that may be peeled in the same manner as hemp, but the threads are finer than silk, and would long since have taken place of it, if it had been allowed to have been imported into Europe.

The vanilla is a weed that creeps up trees in the same manner as ivy, the leaves are of a bright green, long, thick, and pointed at the end; when it has been seven years set in the ground, it begins to bear a kind of husks full of an oily matter, and a seed smaller than that of a poppy, which is used in Europe in perfuming chocolate, liquors, and tobacco.

This country likewise produces several kinds of physical gums, woods, and roots, as also various sorts of woods for dying, and making of cabinet work, and, in particular, several different kinds of ebony.

Here are incredible numbers of monkeys of various kinds, among which is one called by the Indians Sapajous, a little yellowish ape with large eyes, a white face, and black chin. They are of a low stature, and very lively and diverting, but so tender, that it is with great difficulty they can be brought over alive to Europe. The

114 The Discoveries of the DUTCH

woods also abound with small tygers, deer, hogs, porcupines, camelions, monstrous serpents, and many other animals and reptiles.

Tame and wild fowl are also very plentiful, and with these they supply the European settlements on the sea coast. They consist of parrots, toucans, flamingos, large wild ducks, with red feathers on their heads, and several other birds chiefly remarkable for their feathers.

The sea, near the coast, abounds with fish, the most common is the cat-fish, which is yellow and very large, mullets, thornbacks, lamentsines and turtle.

The natives are of a reddish complexion, of a low stature, and of a robust, strong constitution. They have long black and lank hair, and have no other covering than a little cotton wool, which hangs from their waist down to their legs, except several folds of cotton cloth, wherewith they cover their arms and faces, and a sort of crown of feathers of various colours, which they wear on their heads by way of ornament. They also bore a hole between their nostrils, and hang to it a small piece of money, or a large green stone, or rather crystal, brought from the river of the Amazons, and on this stone they set a great value. They also cut off their beards and dye their faces with rocou.

The women are generally shorter than the men, but though they appear of a red complexion, they are tolerably handsome, for their eyes are usually blue, and their features well formed. They fasten to their waists a piece of cloth of about six inches square, of the same sort as that

worn

worn by  
woven in  
These  
of age.  
are judi  
fishing  
part of  
pains in  
inclined  
latter, e  
of rever  
till they  
prisoner  
Europea  
rity seem  
than pro  
for wher  
by the la  
my who  
no reply  
ed full  
of the G  
they wo  
travel th  
great eat  
of the r  
also Indi  
drink at  
and then  
semble to  
mit one  
fed him  
rejoicing

T C H

deer, hogs, serpents, and plentiful, pean fettle- of parrots, with red other birds th fish, the yellow and ntines and xion, of a onstitution. and have ool, which gs, except n they co- crown of wear on also bore ng to it a stone, or r of the great va- dye their the men, plexion, eyes are formed. cloth of t as that worn

worn by the men on their arms and faces, and woven in stripes of several colours.

These Indians generally live to above 100 years of age. They are endued with good sense, and are judicious, ingenious, patient and skilful in fishing and hunting. They spend the greatest part of their time in these exercises, and spare no pains in procuring provisions. They are more inclined to peace than war, but will engage in the latter, either upon a just quarrel or for the sake of revenge. Their wars are seldom concluded till they have made forty or fifty of their enemies prisoners, whom they either kill, or sell to the Europeans on the coast, for slaves. This barbarity seems rather the effect of an ancient custom, than proceeding from their natural dispositions; for when the Europeans represent to them, that by the laws of God, men are forbid to kill an enemy whom they have taken prisoner, they make no reply; and some of the Asoquas have appeared full of indignation, on being told, that some of the Galibis insinuated to the Europeans, that they would be roasted by them, if they should travel through their country. They are generally great eaters. Their common food is cakes made of the mandiaca root, baked on the embers, as also Indian wheat, fish, and fruit. They do not drink at their ordinary meals till they have done, and then only one draught; but when they assemble together for warlike enterprizes, or to admit one into their council, after they have exposed him to several trials, they make extraordinary rejoicings, which frequently hold three or four days,

116 The Discoveries of the DUTCH  
days, continuing till they have drank up all their  
liquors; for upon these occasions they make three  
or four different kinds of drink, some of which  
are rendered strong by fermentation.

C H A P. II.

*An account of the islands of Tobago, St. Eustatia,  
Saba, St. Martin, Curaccas, Bonair, and Aru-  
ba, possessed by the Dutch in the West-Indies.*

**I**N the year 1628, king Charles I. granted To-  
bago, Trinity island, Barbuda, and St. Bernard,  
to Philip, earl of Pembroke and Montgomery;  
but it does not appear that any settlement was  
made on these islands in consequence of this  
grant; and therefore about the year 1642, the  
Dutch from Flushing, sent a considerable colony  
to the island of Tobago, where they fixed them-  
selves very commodiously; and though they at  
first found the climate sickly and unhealthy, yet  
in proportion as they cleared the land, the air  
agreed with them better, and they began to ex-  
tend their settlements: but while they were in  
this situation, the Spaniards from the island of  
Trinity, in conjunction with the Indians from  
St. Vincent, fell upon them, murdered them to a  
man, and destroyed their plantations; after which  
the island was deserted for several years.

About the year 1664, Mr. Adrian Lampsin, a  
Dutch East-India director, and his brother Mr.  
Cornellus Lampsin, burgomaster of Flushing,  
formed the design of resettling this island, entirely  
at

up all their  
make three  
ne of which

*St. Eustatia,  
o, and Aru-  
Indies.*

granted To-  
t. Bernard,  
ntgomery;  
ment was  
ce of this  
1642, the  
ble colony  
ked them-  
gh they at  
althy, yet  
d, the air  
an to ex-  
were in  
island of  
ms from  
hem to a  
er which

mpfin, a  
ther Mr.  
luffing,  
entirely  
at

at their own expence. Mr. Cornelius Lampsin, having obtained a licence for that purpose of the states, applied to the crown of France, in order to prevent, if possible, any danger to his new colony, from the subjects of that kingdom; upon which Lewis XIV. resolved to oblige the Dutch, created Mr. Lampsin baron of Tobago, with all the privileges of a baron of France. Upon these encouragements the two brothers proceeded, and by their prudent management, in the space of eleven years, rendered this waste and desert country the most flourishing for its size of any of the leeward islands.

This island, which lies in  $11^{\circ} 15'$  north latitude, is the most easterly of all the islands called the Antilles, it is about 12 leagues in length, four in breadth, and 30 in circumference. From one of the largest isles in the province of Zeeland they called it new Walcheren, raised a very strong fortress called Lampsinberg, and two other good forts named Beveren and Belleviste; and, what is very surprising, settled at their own expence, during their administration, 1200 white people in that island; who succeeded in raising all the commodities brought from the West-Indies, as tobacco, sugar, ginger, cotton, indigo, cacao, cassia, fustic, rocou, ananas, citrons, oranges, &c. and had besides some very valuable commodities, not to be found in the other islands, as a great quantity of gum Copal, wild mace and nutmegs, and an excellent kind of sassafras: besides which they raised all sorts of grain and provisions, sufficient not only for their own use, but to export some to the other islands.



However in 1674, marshal d'Estrees, by the express orders of Lewis XIV. sailed with a large fleet to destroy this very settlement, notwithstanding its being made under his protection, and by his encouragement. The Dutch defended themselves obstinately; but after two hard-fought battles they were defeated, being overpowered by numbers; and, to the entire ruin of the industrious planters, and the eternal infamy of that perfidious prince, the colony was totally destroyed.

The island was however restored to the Dutch by the treaty of Nimeguen; but on the 27th of December, 1677, it was taken by the count d'Etrees, vice-admiral of France; after which Tobago was one of the four islands, which, at the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, were declared neutral; notwithstanding which, the marquis de Caylis, governor of the French islands, soon after began to fortify and settle it; but the court of Great-Britain warmly remonstrating against this violation of the peace, the French court disavowed his proceedings, ordered him home, and the settlement to be discontinued. In this state it remained till the definitive treaty of Fontainebleau, in 1703, by which Tobago was ceded to Great-Britain.

In 1635, the Dutch took possession of the island of St. Eustatia, and the states granted the property of it to Mr. Vanre, and some other merchants of Flushing, who soon settled a colony upon it, consisting of about 600 families. But in the year 1665, the Dutch were dispossessed by the English, and colonel Morgan was sent with 300 buccaneers to keep possession of the place; however this gentleman soon after making an attempt

temp  
Chri  
Dut  
Grea  
ters  
to the  
howe  
restor  
since  
peace  
St.  
Chri  
island  
pears  
sing o  
ward  
of pla  
ation  
dustry  
tains a  
tlemen  
nished  
cumsta  
Europ  
their m  
happ  
land an  
other  
tobacco  
land;  
island  
clouds,  
terns,  
top of

rees, by the  
with a large  
otwithstand-  
ion, and by  
nded them-  
fought bat-  
powered by  
he industri-  
f that per-  
destroyed.

the Dutch  
he 27th of  
the count  
ter which  
which, at  
lared neu-  
arquis de  
soon after  
e court of  
gainst this  
disavow-  
e, and the  
state it re-  
tainbleau  
to Great-

n of the  
anted the  
her mer-  
a colony  
es. But  
fessed by  
ent with  
e place;  
g an at-  
tempt

tempt upon the French part of the island of St. Christopher's was killed; and the next year the Dutch and French engaging in a war against Great-Britain, attacked and made themselves masters of this island, which was afterwards restored to the Dutch by the treaty of Breda. The French, however, took it from them in 1689, but it was restored to them again by the treaty of Ryswick; since which time they have remained in the peaceable and quiet possession of it.

St. Eustatia, is situated to the north-west of St. Christopher's in  $17^{\circ} . 40$ . north latitude. This island, which is only five leagues in compass, appears to the southward like a high mountain rising out of the sea, but stretches out to the northward into a pretty good country. The number of plantations upon it, and the comfortable situation of its inhabitants do great honour to the industry of the Dutch. All the sides of the mountains are laid out into small well cultivated settlements; the houses are well built and well furnished, most of the inhabitants are in good circumstances, and have warehouses filled with European commodities, with which they furnish their neighbours at a high price, whenever they happen to be disappointed of supplies from England and France. They also raise, besides some other commodities, great quantities of excellent tobacco, which comes to a good market in Holland; and yet there is not a drop of water in the island but what they are supplied with from the clouds, which they preserve so carefully in cisterns, that they are very seldom distressed. The top of the mountain is covered with a vast wood,

in the middle of which, instead of the point that might be expected, as it rises in the form of a sugar loaf, there is a wide and deep cavern, which was probably once a volcano.

To the north-west of this island, lies that of Saba, in  $17^{\circ} 35$ . north latitude. It at first sight appears to be a rock, but the Dutch governors of St. Eustatia have settled a small colony there, in a valley where they raise tobacco and other things. Both these islands have the misfortune of not having a single port; St. Eustatia however has a good road where all the ships ride, and the Dutch have erected a pretty strong fort to command it.

We now come to the island of St. Martin, situated in  $18^{\circ} 15$ . north lat. a little inconsiderable island, about seven leagues in length, and four in breadth, and yet inhabited by two powerful nations; tho' its smallness is not its only disadvantage, for the climate is far from being wholesome, and the soil cannot be very fertile, as there are no rivers, and very few springs, and even these are dried up in the hot seasons, so that the inhabitants are obliged to have recourse to their cisterns of rain water; yet as insignificant as this place may appear, it has been contended for, by the Spaniards, French, and Dutch. The French were the first European nation who attempted to settle this island; but allowing the Dutch to trade with them, they seized a favourable opportunity, surprising the French, drove them out, and then built a fort for their own security; but the Spaniards not liking their neighbourhood, drove out the Dutch in their turn, and erected a strong fortrefs,

point that  
 arm of a su-  
 ern, which

lies that of  
 t first fight  
 overnors of  
 y there, in  
 and other  
 misfortune  
 atia howe-  
 ride, and  
 ng fort to

artin, situ-  
 onfiderable  
 and four  
 powerful  
 nly disad-  
 ng whole-  
 e, as there  
 and even  
 o that the  
 se to their  
 ant as this  
 d for, by  
 ne French  
 mpted to  
 h to trade  
 ortunity,  
 and then  
 the Spa-  
 hrove out  
 rong for-  
 trefs,

trrefs, to prevent any other nation settling upon it: however at length perceiving that the English, French, and Dutch had seized the more valuable islands, they thought it ridiculous to be any longer at the expence of keeping this, and therefore resolved to quit it. This resolution was taken in the year 1648, and was soon after executed; for having destroyed their cisterns, burned their houses and blown up their fort, they retired to Porto Rico.

In this Spanish garrison were four Frenchmen, five Dutchmen, and a mulatto, who being unwilling to go, hid themselves in a wood till the Spaniards were embarked, and then boldly sallied out to take possession of the whole island. They however soon divided, and made choice of different places to settle in, and even by a formal treaty, these ten persons agreed to divide the country, between the French and Dutch nations. The Dutch making a little canoe, sent one of their number to St. Eustatia, to inform the governor of their situation, and promised the French to send the like notice to the governor of St. Christopher's: the former being their own affair was exactly performed, but the latter, concerning only their neighbours, was entirely neglected.

The governor of St. Eustatia being willing to seize this new acquisition, sent one Martin Thomas with a considerable number of planters to take possession of that part of the island, which belonged to the Dutch. After this they began to treat the French but very indifferently, who receiving no news from their countrymen, began  
 to

to suspect the cause, and therefore with some difficulty sent a person to St. Christopher's to inform M. de Poincy of the agreement they had made, and the hardships under which they laboured; whereupon he dispatched an officer and 30 men, to take possession for the crown of France; but the Dutch would not suffer them to land, declaring that they considered themselves as the legal possessors of that island.

The French officer no sooner returned to St. Christopher's, than M. de Poincy sent his nephew to put an end to the dispute; and this commission he performed so effectually, that the Dutch governor was glad to settle the division of the island, according to the first agreement; by which all that part of it towards Anguilla, was to belong to the French, while the other side, in which the Spanish fort before stood, remained in the possession of the Dutch; the former was indeed, in every respect, the better half, only the Dutch had on their side the advantage of some salt pits. This contract was settled on the top of the highest hill in the island, which was from thence called la Montagne des Accordees, the mountain of agreement.

From this time the two nations lived together in strict friendship; the French settlement however is of very little consequence, though that of the Dutch is in a flourishing condition, for they have large warehouses and carry on a considerable trade, particularly in tobacco. This island would be still more considerable if the Dutch had a tolerable port, but they have only a road where ships are much exposed, and it be-

sides

sides lie  
of St.  
tree, w  
dlewoo  
and at  
a very  
to their  
coast, a  
vantag  
Cura  
written  
about n  
situated  
the soil  
still far  
thy, ye  
of the l  
from th  
ble, co  
great c  
their ex  
plantat  
are rai  
scarce n  
these in  
to wan  
better p  
thing h  
far from  
cipal s  
taars.  
The  
side of  
harbour  
east end

with some dif-  
er's to inform  
ey had made,  
ey laboured;  
and 30 men,  
France; but  
land, declar-  
as the legal

turned to St.  
his nephew  
commission  
the Dutch go-  
of the island,  
y which all  
as to belong  
n which the  
the posses-  
indeed, in  
Dutch had  
e salt pits.  
the high-  
hence call-  
ountain of

d together  
ent how-  
ugh that  
ition, for  
n a confi-  
o. This  
le if the  
ave only  
nd, it be-  
sides

sides lies too much to the leeward. In the island of St. Martin there is great plenty of a kind of tree, which both the Dutch and French call candlewood, for the small sticks serve for candles, and at the same time they light the room, yield a very agreeable scent. We are now to proceed to their other islands which lie nearer the Spanish coast, and from which they receive greater advantages.

Curacao, or it is pronounced, and sometimes written by the Dutch, Currassaw, is an island about nine or ten leagues long, and five broad, situated in  $12^{\circ} 40'$  north latitude; but, though the soil is far from being fruitful, and the climate still farther from being either agreeable or healthy, yet such have been the care and industry of the Dutch, that they receive great advantages from this small, and to appearance, inconsiderable, country, in which there was formerly a great quantity of cattle; but they have turned their extensive pastures into sugar and tobacco plantations, so that the provisions of all sorts that are raised in this island, it is thought would scarce maintain its inhabitants for one day; yet these inhabitants are so far from being exposed to want, that there is not a more plentiful or better provided place in the West-Indies; every thing however fetches a high price, but this is so far from being a disadvantage, that it is the principal source of the great wealth of the inhabitants.

The harbour of Santa Barbara is on the south side of the east end of the island, but the chief harbour is about three leagues from the south-east end of the south side, where the Dutch have a very

a very good town, and a strong fort; there is no anchoring at its entrance, but being got in, it is a place of great security. The Dutch town is for its size one of the finest in America, and it has every thing requisite to render it commodious and agreeable, as far as the climate and soil will permit. The public buildings are very neat; the port is rendered as safe as possible, and though the entry is dangerous, yet the precautions taken by the government, for the service of strangers, not only free them from all difficulties, but render them also in a great measure insensible of any hazard; by which means it is become one of the most frequented ports in the West-Indies. All kind of labour is here performed by engines, with such dexterity, that ships are lifted at once into the dock, where they are carefully and effectually careened; and all nations are with equal readiness furnished with provisions, naval stores, ammunition, and even artillery.

Bonaira and Aruba are also two islands in the possession of the Dutch, dependent upon the island of Curacao. The former lies ten leagues to the eastward of that island, and is about 17 leagues in compass. The Dutch have a deputy governor, a guard of soldiers, and a considerable number of Indians, with a fort for the protection and security of the place.

The Indians are husbandmen and plant yams, potatoes, maize, and Guinea corn, but they are chiefly employed about cattle, particularly in sending great quantities of goats flesh to Curacao. There are also some horses, bulls, and cows, though they are not so numerous as the goats; but

but in al  
or any o  
tioned.  
there are  
large.  
houses, v  
standing  
end of th  
and thro  
these spr  
the place  
where D  
come a v  
The is  
Curacao  
inhabitan  
horses, t  
ny, whic  
of garden  
racao co  
methods  
gers to  
wherein  
roots, fo  
they do f  
But to  
above sev  
commod  
tine trade  
Negroes,  
numerou  
were bro  
ported 1  
since the

there is no  
 ot in, it is a  
 town is for  
 and it has  
 commodious  
 and soil will  
 y neat; the  
 and though  
 tions taken  
 f strangers,  
 but render  
 of any ha-  
 one of the  
 ndies. All  
 gines, with  
 t once into  
 effectually  
 qual readi-  
 tores, an-  
 nds in the  
 upon the  
 en leagues  
 about 17  
 e deputy  
 nconsiderable  
 protection  
 ant yams,  
 they are  
 ularly in  
 Curacao.  
 nd cows,  
 e goats;  
 bur

but in all the island there are no sheep or hogs, or any other animals except those already mentioned. The south side is a plain low land, and there are several sorts of trees, but none very large. There is a small spring of water by the houses, which serves the inhabitants, notwithstanding its being brackish; however, at the west end of the island is a good spring of fresh water, and three or four Indian families live there; these springs afford all the fresh water found in the place; near the east end is a good salt pond, where Dutch sloops go for salt, which is now become a very considerable commodity there.

The island of Aruba lies seven leagues west of Curacao; but tho' it is not very considerable; the inhabitants breed some cattle and a great many horses, this renders it of service to the chief colony, which it also furnishes with a great quantity of garden stuff, without which the people at Curacao could not subsist; for, among their other methods of getting money, one is, allowing strangers to erect hospitals on shore, for their sick, wherein they consume a great many greens and roots, for which they pay a very high price, as they do for all other conveniences.

But to return to Curacao; as this island is not above seven leagues from the Spanish coast, it is commodiously situated for carrying on a clandestine trade. This was first begun by the sale of Negroes, brought thither by the Dutch from their numerous settlements on the coast of Guinea, who were brought openly by the Spaniards, and transported 1500 at a time, in their own vessels. But since the English at Jamaica have interfered in this



126 The Discoveries of the D U T C H, &c.  
this trade, it has sunk considerably. [However the  
dealers at Curacao, and their correspondents in  
Holland were too conversant in business to let the  
declension of the slave trade rob them of the be-  
nefit of this island, they therefore built vast ma-  
gazines, which they stored with European goods;  
and this not only preserved the remainder of their  
slave trade, which was winked at by the Spanish  
governors, but the Spaniards under the pretence  
of buying slaves, run all hazards to purchase the  
European commodities they wanted, by which  
means vast sums are annually traded for in this  
way.

It has been computed that in time of peace,  
the trade of this island did not produce less to the  
Dutch than five millions of florins per annum,  
which is about half a million sterling. But in  
time of war the profit is much larger, for then  
every article of their commerce is vastly increas-  
ed: they sell more naval and military stores,  
more slaves, and more European goods to the  
Spaniards: and in the late war, they, in defiance  
of the most solemn treaties, supplied the French  
islands with provisions, ammunition, and naval  
stores.

A DANISH

D

*A short a*  
St

**T**H  
the world  
of St. Th  
Danes;  
tude, an  
the Virg  
in circun  
on, and  
a manne  
defend th  
winds.  
which fr  
with fou  
works no  
a pallifac  
two smal  
would be

T C H, &c.

However the  
respondents in  
ess to let the  
n of the be-  
nilt vast ma-  
ean goods ;  
nder of their  
the Spanish  
the pretence  
urchase the  
by which  
l for in this

of peace,  
e less to the  
er annum,  
g. But in  
er, for then  
ly increas-  
ary stores,  
ods to the  
n defiance  
he French  
and naval

DANISH

A  
DANISH Settlement

IN

A M E R I C A.

---

*A short description of the islands of St. Thomas and  
St. Croix, in the possession of the Danes.*

**T**HE only remaining islands in this part of the world, that we shall now mention, are those of St. Thomas and St. Croix, which belong to the Danes ; the former is situated in  $18^{\circ}$ . north latitude, and is one of that cluster of islands called the Virgins. Though it is not above seven leagues in circumference, it is in a commodious situation, and has an excellent port of an oval form, in a manner surrounded by two promontories which defend the ships that lie within from almost all winds. In the bottom of this port is a small fortress which stands in a plain, and is a regular square with four small bastions, but it has neither outworks nor a ditch, it being only surrounded with a pallisade. On the right and left of the fort are two small eminences which in our plantations would be called bluffs ; but though they seem designed

signed for batteries that would command the whole harbour, no such use is made of them. The king of Denmark has here a governor and a garrison; notwithstanding which, there is a large factory on the island belonging to the Brandenburgers, the subjects of the king of Prussia.

The neighbourhood of the Spanish island of Porto Rico is only at 17 leagues distance, and secures the inhabitants from the danger of wanting provisions, to which they would otherwise be exposed; for though the soil is tolerably good and every foot of it cultivated, yet it would not produce sufficient for the maintenance of the inhabitants, who are very numerous.

The town of St. Thomas consists of one long street, at the end of which is the Danish magazine, a large magnificent and convenient building. The Brandenburg factory is also very considerable, and the persons belonging to it are chiefly French refugees, who fled thither when the protestants were expelled from the French islands. The chief produce of their plantations is sugar, which is very fine grained, but made in small quantities; yet the Danish governor, who is usually a man of some rank, lives in a manner suitable to his character, and generally acquires a good fortune in that station. The director of the Danish trade also becomes rich in a few years, and the inhabitants in general are in very easy circumstances.

To this island the Spaniards are continually sending large vessels to purchase slaves. This is the chief support of the Danish and Brandenburg commerce, as these slaves are drawn from  
their

their settlements if they become Spaniards all sorts of ways a chiefly to resort of this port the sale necessary deal of time of neutral thither

St. C. St. Thomas, rude. but not healthy, and lemons and beautiful

This French by his sect de many among moved

their settlements upon the coast of Africa, which, if they had not this trade, would have long ago become useless, and consequently deserted. The Spaniards also buy here, as well as at Curacao, all sorts of European goods, of which there is always a vast stock in the magazine, belonging chiefly to the Dutch. There is likewise a great resort of English, Dutch, and French vessels to this port, where they can always depend upon the sale of superfluous, and the purchase of necessary commodities. But though a prodigious deal of business is transacted in time of peace, in time of war it is vastly increased, for being a neutral port, the privateers of all nations resort thither to sell their prizes.

St. Croix, is seated about five leagues east of St. Thomas's, and about 30 west of St. Christopher's, in  $18^{\circ}$ . north lat. and in  $65^{\circ}$ . west longitude. It is about ten or twelve leagues in length, but not above three broad. The air is very unhealthy, but the soil is easily cultivated; very fertile, and produces sugar canes, citrons, oranges, lemons, pomegranates, and other excellent fruits, and has several fine trees, whose wood is very beautiful, and proper for inlaying.

This island has had several masters; but the French abandoning it in 1696, it was purchased by his late Danish majesty. It was then a perfect desert, but was settled with great expedition, many persons from the English islands, and among them some of great wealth, having removed thither.

ES  
 mand the  
 of them.  
 rnor and a  
 e is a large  
 Branden-  
 ussia.  
 a island of  
 e, and se-  
 f wanting  
 vife be ex-  
 good and  
 d not pro-  
 the inha-  
 F one long  
 ish maga-  
 ent build-  
 also very  
 g to it are  
 ther when  
 he French  
 plantations  
 at made in  
 rnor, who  
 a manner  
 y acquires  
 director of  
 few years,  
 very easy  
 continually.  
 This is  
 Branden-  
 awn from  
 their

The first part of the book  
 is a history of the  
 city of London  
 from the time of  
 the Romans  
 to the present  
 time. The second  
 part is a history  
 of the city of  
 London from the  
 time of the  
 Saxons to the  
 present time.

DE

V

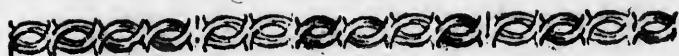
DE



VOYAGES

ROUND THE

W O R L D.



V

SIR

Admiral

Magellan

off by

co, w

bour t

island

de Ver

vessel

of Pla

where

then .

is tried

Admiral

ed himse

\* It m

gin these

Magellan

T H E  
V O Y A G E  
O F  
S I R F R A N C I S D R A K E  
R O U N D T H E  
W O R L D.\*  
C H A P. I.

*Admiral Drake sails from Plymouth, and arrives at Magador, where one of his men is seized and carried off by the inhabitants. He proceeds to Cape Blanco, where he seizes a ship, and leaving the harbour takes a Portuguese vessel. He arrives at the island of Mayo, and passes by others of the Cape de Verd islands, near which he takes a Portuguese vessel laden with wine. He arrives at the river of Plate, and proceeds from thence to Seal Bay, where he trades with the Natives. The admiral then sails to Port St. Julian, where Mr. Doughty is tried and hanged.*

**A**dmiral Drake, who had before distinguished himself in several voyages by his integrity,  
I  
bravery,

\* It might here be expected that we should begin these voyages round the world with that of Magellan, who first passed the streights that bear his  
his



bravery, and conduct †, sailed out of Plymouth Sound on the 15th of November 1573, with the resolution to chastise the Spaniards for the ill treatment both he and this nation had received from that people. He had five ships under his command; the Pelican, which he afterwards called the Hind; burthen 100 tons; the Elizabeth of 80 tons, commanded by capt. John Winter; the Marygold, a bark of 30 tons burthen, commanded by John Thomas; the Swan, a fly-boat of 50 tons, under the command of John Chester; and a pinnace of 15 tons, Thomas Moon, commander. These ships were manned with 164 able men; furnished with a large stock of provisions, and had four pinnaces on board, stowed in pieces.

his name, and is generally reckoned the first who compassed the globe, though he was killed in his passage at the island of Mathan, in the East-Indies: his ship however returned to Spain; and this voyage would have been highly worthy of attention, had it been written with that regard to truth which should never be violated by those who would convey real instruction. In proof of this assertion, we need only mention Magellan's preaching the Christian religion to the inhabitants of Messana, and converting not only the King but the whole island, though he could not possibly know a word of their language, nor they a syllable of his. Indeed the whole voyage abounds with absurdities of the like kind.

† In our account of the discoveries of the English. See Vol. iv. Chap. 2.

pieces, to  
this fleet  
Several of  
the Pelica  
they wei  
where ha  
December  
passed Cu  
arrived a  
more to t  
ed the pla  
separatio  
Magad  
land, bet  
a very fa  
Drake or  
gether, a  
of the in  
signs of p  
in the ac  
them; o  
hostage  
signs, tha  
an offer  
they wo  
whereup  
giving th  
lin; upo  
compani  
The n  
appeared  
gined th  
boar was  
men, en

pieces, to be set up as occasion required. But this fleet meeting with a violent storm in which several of the ships were much damaged, and the Pelican, in particular, losing her main mast, they were obliged to put back to Plymouth; where having refitted, they set sail on the 13th of December, with a favourable wind, on the 25th passed Cape Cantin in Morocco, and on the 27th arrived at the island of Magador, 18 leagues more to the southward, which had been appointed the place of general rendezvous in case of a separation.

Magador is situated about a mile from the main land, between which and that island, they found a very safe and convenient harbour. Here Mr. Drake ordered one of the pinnaces to be put together, and while they were thus employed, some of the inhabitants approached the shore, making signs of peace, and two of them ventured on board in the admiral's boat, which was sent to fetch them; one of the English being left by way of hostage till their return. These told them by signs, that the reason of their coming was to make an offer of their friendship, and that the next day they would furnish his ships with provisions; whereupon Mr. Drake returned their civility by giving them some linen cloth, shoes, and a javelin; upon which those on shore, on receiving their companions, freely released the hostage.

The next day a considerable body of the natives appeared near the sea side: when it being imagined that they came laden with provisions, the boat was sent to receive them; but one of the men, entertaining no distrust, and hastily leap-

ing out, as imagining himself among friends, was immediately seized, and others of the natives quitting an ambuscade, the sailors who were going to attempt to rescue their companion, were glad to recover their boat, and put off with great precipitation. The admiral being extremely exasperated at this piece of treachery, landed a body of men, and marched a considerable way into the country to no purpose, for the Moors every where avoided him; he therefore returned to his ship, and the pinnace being finished in four days, they set sail from the coast of Morocco on the 30th of December.

The person who had been thus made prisoner was named John Fry. He was carried up into the country, and examined with respect to his nation, and the destination of the fleet, and having declared that they were English ships bound to the Streights, under the command of admiral Drake, who to conceal his real design had artfully caused this report to be spread, he was sent back with assurances of friendship, and some presents for the admiral; but he being gone before Fry's return, he was afterwards sent back to England in a merchant ship.

On the 17th of January, the admiral arrived at Cape Blanco, where he found a ship at anchor, with only two men left to guard her. Of this ship he made a prize, and ordering her to be taken into the harbour, staid there four days, both to lay in a stock of fresh provisions, of which he found great plenty, and to exercise the men on shore, in order to fit them as well for the land, as the sea service. The inhabitants would have sold him

him. f  
a suck  
not ch  
suppli  
were t  
him a

The  
Janua  
bound  
leaving  
master  
miral  
called  
of drie  
such o  
island,  
rived o  
coast  
stoppe  
Winte  
to take  
the fo  
plenty  
grapes  
standi  
was to  
goats a  
sily ca  
many  
laid in  
red, th  
with th  
also fa  
made

oyage  
g friends, was  
the natives  
who were go-  
panion, were  
ff with great  
xtremely ex-  
landed a bo-  
ble way into  
Moors every  
turned to his  
in four days,  
rocco on the

ade prisoner  
ried up into  
spect to his  
et, and hav-  
ships bound  
of admiral  
n had artful-  
he was sent  
nd some pre-  
gone before  
back to Eng-

iral arrived  
p at anchor,  
er. Of this  
er to be ta-  
days, both  
f which he  
he men on  
he land, as  
d have sold  
him

him some slaves, and offered him a woman with a sucking child at her breast, but Mr. Drake did not chuse to engage in this traffic. He however supplied them with fresh water, of which they were then in great want, and in return they gave him ambergrise and some precious gums.

The admiral left this harbour on the 22d of January, taking with him a Portuguese caraval, bound to the Cape de Verd Islands, for salt, and leaving behind him a small bark of his own. The master of the Portuguese vessel informed the admiral that in one of the Cape de Verd Islands, called Mayo, there was a considerable quantity of dried goats, which were annually prepared for such of the king's ships as called there. At this island, on which were some Portuguese, they arrived on the 27th, but found the villages on the coast abandoned, and the wells of fresh water stopped up. A body of men commanded by capt. Winter, were ordered to march into the country to take a view of it, which they did, and found the soil extremely fertile, and producing great plenty of fruit, particularly fine cocoas, figs, and grapes of a most delicious flavour; and notwithstanding its being in the midst of winter, the air was temperate and pleasant. They saw many goats and kids, but they were too swift to be easily caught, though they might have brought off many that were old, dead, and dried, that were laid in their way; from which they justly inferred, that the inhabitants had been forbid to trade with them; and this was indeed the case. They also saw large quantities of wild hens, and salt made by the heat of the sun, and at length dis-

covered plenty of water, but at too great a distance from the ships for them to think of bringing any on board.

On the 31st of January they passed by the island of St. Jago, the vallies of which were inhabited by the Portuguese, while the mountains were possessed by the Moors. Near this island they saw two Portuguese ships under sail, and as Portugal was then annexed to the crown of Spain, he took one of them, which proved to be a good prize, laden with wine. Mr. Drake detained the pilot, but set at liberty the master and all the crew, giving them one of his own pinnaces, and restoring them their cloaths, some provisions, and a butt of wine. On their leaving the island, several pieces of cannon were fired at them, but without doing them any harm.

The same night they came to the island Del Fuego or the burning island, so called from the volcano on its north side. On the south side of Del Fuego they saw a very delightful island, named Brava, which produced oranges, lemons, coconuts, and innumerable vegetables, while the cooling streams with which it is watered, in their progress to the sea, contribute to its fertility, and improve the landkip; but the sea around it being unfathomable, and consequently there being no possibility of anchoring, it is avoided by ships, and to this may be attributed its want of inhabitants, for some of the admiral's people travelling up into the country, met with no sign of a human being, except a poor hermit, who fled from them, and in whose cell they found scarcely any thing besides

besides  
manshi  
Havi  
va, the  
proceed  
which t  
being fo  
together  
They sa  
bonetas,  
ped into  
sharks a  
wings,  
water, a  
their mo  
On th  
and on  
time, at  
the coast  
in sight  
up in se  
the usua  
the appe  
of their  
the peop  
vasion fr  
Two c  
pher, in  
but on th  
to which  
They h  
ships roc  
ing broke  
several s

besides a crucifix, some images of rude workmanship, and an ill-contrived altar.

Having taken in a fresh supply of water at Brava, they quitted the Cape de Verd Islands, and proceeded towards the line; in their approach to which they met with very changeable weather, being sometimes becalmed for a considerable time together, and at others tossed about by tempests. They saw all the way great numbers of dolphins, bonetas, and flying fishes, some of which dropped into their ships; for these being pursued by sharks and other fishes of prey, use their fins as wings, springing up to a great height out of the water, and dropping down when their fins lose their moisture.

On the 17th of February they passed the line, and on the 5th of April saw land for the first time, after a run of 54 days. This proved to be the coast of Brasil, and they no sooner came within sight of the shore than large fires were lighted up in several parts, which were supposed to be the usual sacrifices made by the inhabitants on the appearance of ships to implore the assistance of their gods, to prevent their landing, or to put the people on their guard for fear of a foreign invasion from some unknown enemy.

Two days after, they parted from the Christopher, in a storm of rain, thunder, and lightning, but on the 11th they came up with her at a cape, to which the admiral gave the name of Cape Joy. They here found a small harbour, where the ships rode in great safety, the force of the sea being broken by a large rock, on which they killed several seals; these they kept for food, and found

them

them wholesome, though they did not think them very palatable. They here also took in fresh water; but though the air was mild and the soil of the country rich and fertile, they could discern no other inhabitants but herds of wild deer; some of the sailors however discovered the print of human feet in the sand.

They now steered for the great river of Plate which they entered, but finding no good harbour they put to sea again, and on the night of the 27th, came to a bay, when Mr. Drake took his boat to go on shore and examine the coast; but was overtaken by so thick a fog, that he thought proper to return to his ship, which he could not have found without great difficulty, if Capt. Thomas had not steered in search of him. He however some time after went on shore, and found plenty of water and provisions. The inhabitants leaped and danced with all the signs of mirth and good humour, and were not averse to traffic, though they would receive nothing out of any man's hand, but would have what they purchased laid on the ground for their examination.

The next day the fleet were joined by the Swan, which had been missing; and the Marygold and Christopher, that had been sent out in search of a safer harbour, returned with the agreeable news that they had found one, and thither the whole fleet sailed; where being arrived, the admiral ordered the Swan to be burnt as a superfluous vessel, which was done, after they had divided the provisions and iron work among the rest of the fleet. Here they found such multitudes of seals, that they killed above 200 in an hour. While they

they were  
ed at a  
were st  
able feat  
wear for  
their oth  
wrappec  
an ell lo  
rows, an  
ther defi  
from the  
in order  
people p  
their ne  
paint on  
and ma  
and ador  
daubing  
people l  
were at  
English,  
baubles  
and left  
soon aft  
trich fea  
this the  
and app  
his seein  
retire.  
no ill de  
towards  
by the l  
hind, an  
with it,

ot think them  
k in fresh wa  
and the soil o  
could discern  
d deer; some  
print of hu-

ver of Plate  
ood harbour  
night of the  
ake took his  
e coast; but  
t he thought  
he could not  
f Capt. Tho  
a. He how-  
e, and found  
e inhabitants  
f mirth and  
e to traffic  
out of any  
ey purcha-  
nation.

y the Swan,  
rygold and  
e search of a  
eeable news  
e the whole  
he admiral  
ffluous ves-  
divided the  
rest of the  
les of seals,  
r. While  
they

they were employed on shore, the natives appear-  
ed at a distance upon a rising ground. They  
were strong, well proportioned, and had agree-  
able features; but their faces were painted. They  
wear something wreathed about their heads, and  
their other covering was only the skins of beasts  
wrapped about their waists. They had bows of  
an ell long, and every one of them bore two ar-  
rows, and indeed they seemed to be not altoge-  
ther destitute of military discipline, as appeared  
from the method observed by their commander  
in ordering and ranging them. Some of these  
people paint their bodies all over black, except  
their necks, which they coloured white; other  
paint one shoulder black, and the other white,  
and many of them had their legs tinged black,  
and adorned with white moons. This continual  
daubing closes up the pores, and renders these  
people less susceptible of cold and heat. They  
were at first extremely shy of coming near the  
English, but the admiral having caused some  
baubles to be tied to a pole stuck in the ground,  
and left for them to take when they pleased, they  
soon after came and removed them, leaving of-  
trich feathers and other toys in exchange. Upon  
this the admiral and some of his men came again,  
and approached nearer the hill, but retreated on  
his seeing them give signs of fear, and prepare to  
retire. This convincing the natives that he had  
no ill designs against them, they boldly advanced  
towards the English, and two of them, attracted  
by the lace on the admiral's hat, slyly came be-  
hind, and snatching it off his head, ran away  
with it, and then divided the spoil, one keeping  
the



the hat, and the other the lace. To this place the admiral gave the name of Séal Bay, from the great number of those animals that frequent it. Here is also a bird called a booby, so stupid as to stand still while it is knocked on the head, and many ostriches, the thigh of which bird is as large as the leg of a sizeable sheep; but though they cannot fly, they are not easily taken; for being assisted by the fluttering of their wings, they run fast, and sling stones behind them at their pursuers with a pretty good aim.

Having left this place, they proceeded on their voyage to the southward, and on the 20th of June anchored in Fort St. Julian, so called by Magellan, where the admiral accompanied by six men, going on shore in his boat to take a view of the country, was in some danger from the natives who slew the gunner, a man for whom he had a sincere regard; he however revenged his death by killing the murderer with his own hand. Here they found a gibbet which had been erected by Magellan for the execution of some of his mutinous company, who had conspired his death, and here also admiral Drake caused Mr. Doughty to be tried and hanged for the same crime against himself.

The Ad  
whic  
sea,  
para  
land.  
murd  
at Va  
shore  
ble b  
of sla  
es som  
severe  
Cacaf  
of No

**L**E A  
August,  
lan on th  
found th  
the win  
without  
this gave  
cially as  
rendered  
they four  
fresh wa  
no ancho  
or betwee  
are vast r  
the cloud

oyage  
To this place  
y, from the  
frequent it.  
stupid as to  
e head, and  
n bird is as  
but though  
taken; for  
their wings,  
and them at  
n.  
ed on their  
he 20th of  
o called by  
panied by  
ake a view  
om the na-  
whom he  
venged his  
own hand.  
en erected  
his muti-  
his death,  
Doughty  
ne against

C H A P. II.

*The Admiral sails thro' the Streights of Magellan, which are described; but on his entering the South-sea, meets with a great storm, in which he is separated from the Elizabeth, which returns to England. He arrives at Mocha, where the Indians murder two of his men. He seizes a very rich ship at Valparaiso. Part of the crew are attacked on shore near the harbour of Coquimbo, by a formidable body of Spaniards. He takes a large quantity of silver from a Spaniard who lay asleep, and seizes some Peruvian sheep laden with treasure. Takes several ships richly laden, among which is the Cacafuego, and at length lands and takes possession of Nova-Albion or California.*

**L**EAVING Port St. Julian on the 17th of August, they fell in with the streights of Magellan on the 20th, and the next day entering them, found the passage so intricate and winding, that the wind, though sometimes favourable, was without its changing, frequently against them; this gave them much fatigue and trouble, especially as they had many sudden squalls which rendered this passage very dangerous, for though they found several good harbours, and plenty of fresh water, yet the sea is so deep, that there is no anchoring, except in some very narrow river or between the rocks. On both sides the streights are vast ranges of mountains that rise far above the clouds, and are covered with perpetual snow, where

where they found the air extremely cold, and the men were benumbed with frost and snow. At the south-east part of the streights are several islands, between which the sea breaks in, as it does into the main entrance. It had been imagined that the current always set one way, but they now found from the ebb and flood that this was a mistake, and that the water rose five fathoms all along the coast. These streights are never narrower than one league, or broader than four. On the 24th of August they made an island in the streights, where there were such multitudes of penguins, that they killed 3000 in less than one day.

On the 16th of September they entered the South Sea, but the next day they were driven to the southward by a storm, and were obliged to anchor among some islands, where they found fresh water and excellent herbs, and not far from thence entered another bay, where they saw people ranging from one island to another, in their canoes in search of provisions, who traded with them for some commodities. Steering northward from thence, they on the 3d of October, found three islands, in one of which was an incredible number of birds.

On the 8th of October they lost the Elizabeth commanded by captain Winter, which they imagined was forced back by a storm into the streights; a conjecture that proved true, though they were mistaken in supposing her lost, for the captain, after having taken possession of the streights and the adjacent territories, in the name of queen Elizabeth, was so happy as to return to England.

They

The  
on the 2  
of Mod  
going o  
who be  
fat the  
trifles,  
for whi  
These p  
elty of  
leave th  
order to  
next da  
shore w  
that the  
them fo  
ver to f  
them on  
The  
an India  
for Span  
paraiso  
ral rew  
dily ag  
the ship  
to this  
men tha  
supposi  
of drun  
some Cl  
mediate  
under t  
the Spa  
leaped o

They now steered for the coast of Chili, and on the 29th. of November, cast anchor at the isle of Mocha, where the admiral, with ten men, going on shore, were met by some of the natives, who behaved with great civility, gave them two fat sheep and some potatoes in return for a few trifles, and also promised to bring them water, for which they received some presents beforehand. These people had been driven thither by the cruelty of the Spaniards, who had forced them to leave their habitations and retire to this island, in order to preserve their lives and liberties. The next day therefore two of the men being sent on shore with barrels for water, the natives seeing that they had them at an advantage, and taking them for Spaniards, whom they had resolved never to spare, instantly seized them, and knocked them on the head.

The admiral now continuing his course, met an Indian in a canoe, who mistaking his people for Spaniards, told them, that there was at Valparaiso, a large ship laden for Peru. The admiral rewarded him for his intelligence, and he readily agreed to conduct them to the place where the ship lay at anchor. Upon their coming up to this vessel they found that she had no more men than eight Spaniards and three negroes, who supposing them friends, welcomed them by beat of drum, and invited them on board to drink some Chili wine. With this invitation they immediately complied, and driving the Spaniards under the hatches, took possession, when one of the Spaniards seeing how the others were served, leaped over board, and swam to Valparaiso, upon

K

which

...yage  
...old, and the  
... snow. As  
... are several  
... ks in, as in  
... d been ima-  
... ne way, but  
... ood that this  
... ose five fa-  
... reights are  
... roader than  
... y made an  
... were such  
... lled 3000 in

... entered the  
... re driven to  
... obliged to  
... they found  
... ot far from  
... y saw peo-  
... er, in their  
... raded with  
... northward  
... ber, found  
... a incredible

Elizabeth  
... they ima-  
... e freights;  
... they were  
... ne captain,  
... reights and  
... of queen  
... o England.  
They

which the inhabitants immediately quitted the town. The admiral then having secured his new prize, in which were found to the value of 30,000 Spanish pistoles of pure gold of Baldivia, he manned her boat and his own, landed and rifled both the town and the chapel, whence he took a silver chalice, the altar cloth, and two cruets, of which he made a present to his chaplain; and having also found a considerable quantity of Chili wine, he sent that on board; then he set all his prisoners on shore, except one, whom he kept for his pilot, and directly steering towards Lima, the capital of Peru.

The fleet continuing their course, put into the haven of Coquimbo, and here fourteen men were sent on shore to fetch water, when being discovered by the town, the Spaniards resolved to recover the glory of their nation, by being revenged on so daring an enemy, and therefore sent out a body of 300 horse and 200 foot to attack them. The English however retreated, and after some dispute, reached their ships, with the loss only of one man, who was shot, and whom this formidable army beheaded, while the Indians stuck his body full of arrows. The admiral however ordered a party of men the next day on shore to bury him, to whom the Spaniards in vain displayed a flag of truce, as if to invite them to a parley; but the English believing that their fidelity was no greater than their courage, did not care to trust them, and having interred their companion returned to their ships.

Mr. Drake then weighing anchor proceeded to a port called Tarapaxa, where landing some of

age  
quitted the  
cured his  
the value of  
Baldivia,  
ed and ri-  
vhen he  
d two cru-  
chaplain;  
quantity of  
en he fet  
whom he  
towards  
ut into the  
men were  
ing disco-  
ved to re-  
g reveng-  
sent out  
ck them:  
fter some  
loss only  
this for-  
ans stuck  
however  
shore to  
vain dif-  
hem to a  
their fide-  
did not  
eir com-  
eeded to  
some of  
his

*[The text on this page is extremely faint and illegible, appearing as a series of light grey smudges and ghosting of letters. It is likely bleed-through from the reverse side of the page.]*



*Admiral Drake, seizes eight Peruvian  
Ships laden with Silver.*

his m  
eigh  
4000  
distur  
ing ag  
Spania  
sheep  
sheep  
which  
deliver  
they lo  
fered t  
beasts.

From  
where  
were  
20 po  
fearing  
means  
ing stre  
put to  
bark,  
they to

On t  
of Lin  
lying a  
guard  
being a  
goes of  
rials of  
some f  
another  
lately  
the ad

his men, they found a Spaniard asleep, with eighteen bars of silver lying by him, worth about 4000 Spanish ducats, which they took without disturbing the Spaniard's repose. Soon after landing again, in order to take in water, they met a Spaniard and an Indian driving eight Peruvian sheep laden with very fine silver, each of the sheep having two leathern bags on his back, in which were 100 weight of that metal. When delivering the poor animals from their burdens, they lodged the bags in the ships, and then suffered the Spaniard and Indian to drive away their beasts.

From hence they sailed to the port of Arica, where they found three small barks, in which were 57 wedges of silver, each weighing about 20 pounds; the men who belonged to them, fearing no danger, were all on shore, by which means they took no prisoners. However not being strong enough to attack the town, they again put to sea, and soon after fell in with a small bark, when finding nothing in it but linen cloth, they took a small part of it, and then let her go.

On the 13th of February they entered the port of Lima, where they found a fleet of twelve ships lying at anchor, with scarce any persons left to guard them; the commanders and their crews being all on shore. On their examining the cargoes of these ships they found a chest filled with rials of plate, which they took on board, with some silks and linens; but being informed that another very rich ship called the *Cacafuego*, had lately left that harbour, in order to sail to Païta, the admiral resolved to follow her; but on his





arrival at Paita, found she had left that port and was gone to Panama; he however fell in with another, that in some measure atoned for his disappointment, she having on board 80 pounds weight of fine gold, besides a large golden crucifix adorned with emeralds, which he seized, together with some useful cordage.

The admiral still resolving to continue the pursuit of the Cacafuego, promised that whoever first saw her should have the gold chain he himself wore about his neck; which fell to the share of Mr. John Drake, who first discovered her at about three o'clock in the afternoon, and about six they came up with and boarded her, after having in three shots brought her mizen-mast by the board. They found her cargo full as valuable as it had been represented, she having thirteen chests full of rials of plate, 80 pounds weight of gold, 26 tons of silver bars, and a large quantity of jewels. Among the many rich pieces of plate were two very large silver bowls gilt, which belonged to the pilot, one of which the admiral told him he hoped he would allow him to keep by way of remembrance, to which the pilot who was one of the most considerable persons on board the Spanish ships, readily consented, and immediately presented the other to the admiral's steward.

Having taken this valuable treasure on board, they dismissed the vessel, and allowed her to pursue her course to Panama, after having supplied the captain and his crew with linen, and other necessaries.

The

The  
west wa  
ware,  
and ha  
valuab  
gold,  
breast,  
keepin  
own v

The  
Guaru  
only f  
theref  
his pe  
ed dir  
the co  
tence  
culed  
admir  
fairs,  
autho  
nesses  
own  
write  
perm  
done  
none  
plate  
niard  
gold  
set on  
rigne  
Cape  
illan

The admiral still continuing his course to the westward came up with a ship laden with china ware, silks of the same country, and linen cloth; and having taken out of it what was thought most valuable, and among the rest a falcon of massy gold, which had a valuable emerald set in its breast, he set the ship and her people at liberty, keeping only the pilot to assist in navigating his own vessel.

The pilot steered them into the harbour of Guatulco, and informed them, that there were only seventeen Spaniards in the town. Having therefore put to shore, the admiral and some of his people landed, entered the place, and marched directly to the public hall, where they found the court sitting, and the judge ready to pass sentence on a number of poor negroes who were accused of conspiring to burn the town. But the admiral's coming soon changed the scene of affairs, for without shewing any reverence to the authority of the court, he caused the judges, witnesses, and prisoners, to be carried on board his own ship, where he obliged the chief judge to write to the townsmen to keep at a distance, and permit the English to water in quiet. This being done, the town was ransacked for plunder, but none found, except about a bushel of rials of plate, only one of the failors pursuing a rich Spaniard, who fled from the town, took from him a gold chain, and some jewels. Here the admiral set on shore his Spanish prisoners, and an old Portuguese pilot, whom he had brought from the Cape de Verd islands, and then set sail for the island Canno, where they anchored on the 16th

of March, in a fresh water river. While they lay here they seized a Spanish vessel bound for the Philippine islands, which put in here for refreshment, and having taken a part of her cargo, discharged her.

The admiral now thinking he had in some measure taken revenge on the Spaniards, both for the wrongs his country had suffered from them, as well as from his own private injuries, began to deliberate on the best way of returning home. He reflected that to return by the streights of Magellan, the only passage that had been yet discovered, would be throwing himself into the hands of the Spaniards, who might probably wait for him there with more force than he could be able to resist, as he had but one ship left, and that not strong, though it was very rich. All things therefore considered, he resolved to proceed to the East-Indies, by sailing to the west, and then to follow the Portugueze course, by passing the Cape of Good Hope; but being becalmed, he found it necessary to steer farther to the north, in hopes of obtaining a good wind, upon which he sailed at least 600 leagues, till he came into  $43^{\circ}$  of north latitude, where he found the air excessive cold, and on his proceeding farther, the severity of the weather became more intolerable; he therefore steered back towards the south, till he came into  $38^{\circ}$  north latitude, where he found a very good bay, which he entered with a favourable gale.

This country, on account of its white cliffs, which are seen at a good distance at sea, he in honour of his native soil, called Nova Albion, though it has been since known by the name of

California.

California  
ter-side,  
ther; a fi  
it the pe  
between  
tirely na  
bullrushe  
fastened  
over the  
admiral  
net-wor  
brought  
that the  
ter sent  
feathers  
dy of t  
while t  
of a sm  
ral had  
nence,  
having  
arms,  
sents,  
made  
above t  
howlin  
upon v  
be cele  
ple att  
amaze  
The  
spread  
sons, c  
which

California. There were several huts near the water-side, well fenced from the severity of the weather; a fire was in the middle of each, and round it the people lay upon rushes, with nothing else between them and the earth. The men were entirely naked; but the women wore a covering of bullrushes, dressed after the manner of hemp, and fastened about their waists, with a deer-skin slung over their shoulders. These people soon sent the admiral a present of some feathers and cawls of net-work, and he entertained the persons who brought them with such kindness and liberality, that they were highly delighted. They soon after sent him another present, that consisted of feathers and bags of tobacco: a considerable body of them waited upon him to deliver them, while the rest were gathered together at the top of a small hill, at the bottom of which the admiral had pitched some tents; and from this eminence, one of them harangued the admiral; and having ended his speech, they all laid down their arms, and coming down, offered their own presents, and civilly returned those the admiral had made them; while the women who remained above seemed, by their tearing their hair and howlings, to be engaged in offering sacrifices, upon which the admiral ordered divine service to be celebrated in his tent, and these innocent people attended with great decency, attention, and amazement.

The news of the arrival of these strangers being spread through the country, there came two persons, one of whom made a long speech; from which, and the gestures of both, it was understood

stood that the king himself intended to pay the admiral a visit, provided they would give some token of his receiving a peaceful welcome. Which being readily granted, their sovereign soon after made his appearance, attended by a considerable train. In the front came a very comely person, bearing a staff before the king, upon which hung two crowns made of net-work, artificially wrought with feathers of many colours, and three chains made of bones. The king, who immediately followed, had a very agreeable person, and approached with an air of dignity. He was surrounded by a guard of tall well-looking men, cloathed in skins; then followed the common people, who to make the finer shew, had painted their faces with different colours, and all of them had their arms full of presents, the very children not excepted.

The admiral drew up all his men in a line of battle, and stood within the fences of his tent, ready to receive them: at some distance from him the whole train halted, and observed a profound silence, when the person who marched first with the staff, began a speech, which lasted half an hour; and that being ended, the same officer began a song, and struck up a dance, wherein he was followed by the king and his subjects, who came up singing and dancing to the fences, which the admiral had made to secure his tent from treachery; then all of them sitting down, the king is said to have made a solemn offer of his whole kingdom to the admiral; and, with the consent of his subjects, took off the crown of feathers

oyage  
d to pay the  
d give some  
ome. Which  
n soon after  
considerable  
nely person,  
which hung  
lly wrought  
hree chains  
nmediately  
n, and ap-  
e was sur-  
king men,  
nmon peo-  
d painted  
ll of them  
y children

n a line of  
his tent,  
from him  
profound  
first with  
half an  
officer be-  
wherein  
subjects,  
ne fences,  
his tent  
ng down,  
offer of  
nd, with  
rown of  
feathers

The admiral drew up all his  
back, and stood within the  
to receive them: at four  
the admiral's hand, and  
these, when the person who  
the first began a speech,  
long; and that being ended,  
he was followed by the king  
who came up singing and  
which the admiral had made  
from necessity; then all of  
the king said to have made  
his whole kingdom to the  
the crown of his subjects, took  
feathers

The admiral drew up all his  
back, and stood within the  
to receive them: at four  
the admiral's hand, and  
these, when the person who  
the first began a speech,  
long; and that being ended,  
he was followed by the king  
who came up singing and  
which the admiral had made  
from necessity; then all of  
the king said to have made  
his whole kingdom to the  
the crown of his subjects, took  
feathers



*The King of California, places his Crown  
of Feathers on Admiral Drake's Head.*

feathers h  
the adm  
with other  
miral rece  
one time  
reign, and  
most prob  
they seem  
order of b  
more than  
pay them.  
themselves  
such an h  
lish, that  
mortal, an  
ces, which  
foundest d  
back, and  
them sens  
Being to w

Some tin  
travelled to  
which they  
fat deer, th  
herd. The  
of rabbits,  
entire warr  
those of our  
of their jaw  
visions as t  
their feet  
tail was like  
effeemed by  
cloathing fo

feathers he wore on his head, and placed it upon the admiral's, at the same time investing him with other ensigns of royalty. All which the admiral received, hoping that this surrender might one time or other add to the glory of his sovereign, and the advantage of England. But it is most probable these Indians had no such design: they seemed to consider the English as a superior order of beings; and these actions might be no more than the highest compliment they could pay them. The common people now dispersed themselves among the admiral's tents, expressing such an high admiration and love for the English, that they seemed to think them more than mortal, and even came before them with sacrifices, which they attempted to offer, with the profoundest devotion; but the English kept them back, and endeavoured by their signs to render them sensible, that there was an omnipotent Being to whom alone these honours were due.

Some time after, the admiral and his people travelled to some distance up into the country, which they found to be extremely full of large fat deer, that were very often near 1000 in a herd. There was also such vast plenty of a kind of rabbits, that the whole country seemed one entire warren; but though their heads were like those of our rabbits, they had a bag on each side of their jaws, in which they preserved such provisions as they could not immediately devour; their feet resembled those of a mole, and their tail was like that of a rat. Their flesh was much esteemed by the natives, and their skins afforded clothing for the king and his principal subjects.



The Spaniards had never been upon this shore, and it is certain that Mr. Drake had the honour of first discovering it. He therefore at his departure erected a pillar, and affixed to it a large plate, upon which were engraven her majesty's name and picture, her arms, and title to the country, with the day and year in which the admiral, whose name was also inscribed, had arrived on that coast.

The comes to our shore on the 15th of the month. A narrow bay of boiling rich the Cape of Good Hope takes in a narrow strait, and enters in Portugal. The ship he received after his return to England.

HAVING taken in a fresh supply of provisions, and a sufficient stock of water, the admiral left Nova Albion on the 23d of July, the admiral appearing extremely weary after his departure, and lighting fires on the high hills, was supposed to make sacrifice to the gods in token of these strangers, till the ship was ordered to the westward, for the admiral intended to sail on the 1st of October, company with the admiral, where a great number of small, white, and other birds, and other things, were seen. Their vessels were ordered to sail on the 1st of October, and the admiral departed from the coast of the Cape of Good Hope on the 1st of October.

CHAP.

The A  
at t  
nate  
shore  
in a  
Cele  
rock  
rate  
proc  
five  
doub  
Sierr  
nour

H A  
sions, a  
ral left  
habitar  
departu  
as was  
safety o  
fight.  
wards  
and on t  
drones,  
came o  
ons to  
shining  
of them

## C H A P. III.

*The Admiral sails from Nova-Albion, and arrives at the Ladrone islands, whence he proceeds to Ternate, where he is visited by the king; with a short account of that island. He has forges set up in a small uninhabited island to the southward of Celebes. The ship in danger of being lost on a rock. He comes to an anchor on the island of Baratene; a character of the inhabitants. He then proceeds to Java, where he is well received by five kings. A curious way of boiling rice. He doubles the Cape of Good Hope; takes in water at Sierra Leona, and arrives at Plymouth. The honours he received after his return to England.*

**H**AVING taken in a fresh supply of provisions, and a sufficient stock of water, the admiral left Nova Albion on the 23<sup>d</sup> of July, the inhabitants appearing extremely concerned at his departure, and lighting fires on the highest hills, as was supposed to make sacrifices to procure the safety of these strangers, till the ship was out of sight. Mean while the admiral stretched forwards to the westward, for the Molucca islands, and on the 13<sup>th</sup> of October came up with the Ladrone, whence a great number of small vessels came off, bringing fish, fruit, and other provisions to sell. These vessels looked smooth and shining like burnished horn, and on each side of them lay out two pieces of wood, and the in-

side was adorned with white shells\*. The people in these vessels had the lower part of their ears pared round, and stretched with the heavy pendants that hung in them. Their teeth were as black as jet, occasioned by their chewing an herb with a sort of powder, which they carried about with them for that purpose, and were esteemed of great service in preserving them †. And their nails seemed designed for defensive weapons, by their suffering them to grow at least a full inch in length. These people seemed at first to deal very fairly, but soon began to steal every thing they could lay their hands on; and it was impossible to make them part with any thing on which they had once seized. This usage made the English refuse to deal with them, and hinder their going on board their ship, at which they were so exasperated, that they flung stones; but on firing a single gun, they were so intimidated, that they leaped into the water, and skulked for shelter under their vessels till the ship was at some distance, when nimbly recovering them, they steered to the shore, but not without frequently casting their eyes behind them.

On the 18th they came to several other islands, some of which appeared to be very populous; and,

\* It is evident that these were the Indian Proas, which the reader will see particularly described in Mr. Anson's voyage round the world. Ch. XI.

† These were doubtless the Areca and Betel still used in the East for the same purpose. See Dampier's voyage round the world. Ch. IX.

and, co  
of Tag  
which  
the inh  
Portug  
On t  
Molucc  
ed along  
Ternat  
vicero  
venture  
to prose  
rectly  
great e  
nothing  
ed with  
This  
his first  
nate, h  
chor, be  
present  
ordered  
were er  
no oth  
other r  
In ans  
he was  
ing on  
lish, w  
country  
adds, t  
to lay h  
glorious  
to make

and, continuing their course, passed by the islands of Tagulada, Zelon, and Zewarra; the first of which produces great quantities of cinnamon, and the inhabitants of most of them was friends to the Portugueze.

On the 14th of November they fell in with the Moluccas, and intending to sail to Tydore, coasted along the island Mutyr, subject to the king of Ternate; but were prevented by meeting his viceroy, who, seeing the admiral's ship, boldly ventured on board, and advised him by signs not to prosecute his voyage to Tydore, but to sail directly for Ternate, because his master was a great enemy to the Portugueze, and would have nothing to do with him, if he was at all concerned with Tydore, or the Portugueze settled there.

This intimation induced Mr. Drake to alter his first resolution, and resolving to stay at Ternate, he early the next morning came to an anchor before the town, when he sent the king a present of a velvet cloak; and the messenger was ordered to make him sensible, that his intentions were entirely peaceable, and that he came with no other design but to procure provisions and other necessaries in exchange for merchandize. In answer to which the king let him know that he was much pleased with the thoughts of carrying on a friendly correspondence with the English, who should be welcome to whatever his country afforded. The author of this voyage adds, that this sovereign professed himself ready to lay himself and his kingdom at the feet of so glorious a princess as the queen of England, and to make her his sovereign, as well as theirs; but

if

it must be allowed that this monarch could have no motive for so high-straining a compliment, and that it is more natural to suppose, that this was inserted by the author, with no other view but that of pleasing queen Elizabeth. However, the messenger was received with much pomp and ceremony.

The king having the curiosity to see the ship, resolved to pay the admiral a visit on board, and therefore sent four large vessels filled with the most considerable persons of his court. They were all dressed in white lawn or callico. They had a large canopy of very fine perfumed mats, supported by a frame made of reeds, which spread over their heads from one end of the vessel to the other. They were surrounded by servants, who were also clothed in white, and these were encompassed by ranks of soldiers, on both sides of whom were placed the rowers, in three galleries raised above each other. These vessels rowed by the admiral in great order, each paying him their respects in turn, and then acquainted him by signs that they were sent by the king to conduct him into a safer road. Soon after came the king himself, attended by six grave ancient persons. He seemed much pleased with the English music, and still more with the admiral's generosity, who made him and his nobles some considerable presents that were highly acceptable. He promised to return again the following day, and to send them in the mean time such provisions as they might stand in need of. In this last particular he kept his word, and they received a considerable

considerable  
gar, a k  
The  
and the  
ing the  
Ray beh  
return.

however  
brother,  
of their

On the  
ther of

veral of  
great so  
at least

the cour  
men. So  
ed by tw  
ed. A l

shoulder  
his hair

of the su  
ral rings  
legs wer

leather,  
richly e  
hand of

stood a p  
one bro  
to a staff

strove to  
of the su  
majesty  
reception

considerable quantity of fowls, rice, cloves, sugar, a kind of fruit called frigo and sage. The next morning the king sent his brother and the viceroy on board, to excuse his not visiting the admiral, to invite him on shore, and to stay behind by way of hostage for the admiral's return. This invitation Mr. Drake declined, but however sent some of his retinue with the king's brother, and detained only the viceroy as a pledge of their safety.

On their landing they were received by another of the king's brothers, accompanied by several of the nobles, who conducted them with great solemnity to the castle, where they found at least 1000 persons, the principal of whom were the council, which consisted of 60 very grave men. Soon after, the king himself entered guarded by twelve men, with lances, the points inverted. A loose robe of gold tissue hung over his shoulders, several gold rings were fastened about his hair by way of ornament, and he had a chain of the same metal about his neck. He had several rings set with fine jewels on his fingers. His legs were bare, and his shoes were made of red leather, and over him was borne an umbrella richly embroidered with gold. On the right hand of the chair on which he seated himself, stood a page, with a fan two feet in length and one broad, adorned with sapphires, and fastened to a staff three feet long; the page with this fan strove to allay the heat occasioned by the warmth of the sun, and the throng of the people. His majesty gave the English gentlemen a very kind reception; and, having understood their message, sent

sent one of his council to conduct them back to the ship. The king of Ternate is a very powerful prince, he having 70 islands under his jurisdiction. His religion, as well as that of his subjects, is Mahometanism.

While the admiral staid here, he was visited by a person well attended, who was of the blood royal of China, but banished for a term of years on suspicion of his being guilty of some crimes against the state; during which time he proposed to travel, in order that he might reap some advantage from his misfortunes. He seemed to be a man of sound sense, of a strong judgment, and a good memory, and having probably acquired the knowledge of some European language, proved an entertaining companion. He was highly pleased with the admiral's behaviour, and strove to persuade him to touch at China; but in vain; for having accomplished what induced him to undertake his voyage, his thoughts were now solely bent on returning home.

The admiral therefore having procured what he wanted at Ternate, set sail from thence, and five days after cast anchor at a small uninhabited island to the southward of Celebes, where he ordered forges to be set up, to repair the iron-work of the ship, in which the smiths were obliged to make use of charcoal as all their seacoal was now consumed. This island was extremely woody, the trees were large and very lofty, fruit and without boughs, except towards the top, where the leaves somewhat resembled those of our English broom. Here they observed in the night great multitudes of shining flies, no bigger than

the

the common  
and down in  
made them  
bats as big a  
live upon l  
size, that on  
hunger of  
ground like.  
After stay  
weighed, an  
trangled amo  
suddenly thi  
1579, ran u  
sail from eig  
of the next  
the ship, by t  
pieces of ord  
after the win  
ed them.

Some time  
the winds and  
islands of Bar  
ty of provisio  
nutmegs, long  
oranges, coco  
particularly a fru  
is hard but ha  
is soft, and ea  
produces gold  
natives are far  
humanity and  
ble. They ar  
with an hone  
put christians

the common fly in England, which skimming up and down in the air between the trees and bushes made them appear as if on fire: they also found bats as big as hens, and a sort of cray fish which live upon land, and are of so extraordinary a size, that one of them is sufficient to satisfy the hunger of four persons: these burrow in the ground like rabbits.

After staying 26 days at this island, they weighed, and again set sail; but were soon entangled among several small islands, and the wind suddenly shifting, they, on the 9th of January 1579, ran upon a rock, on which they stuck fast from eight at night till four in the afternoon of the next day. In this distress they lightened the ship, by taking out three tons of cloaths, eight pieces of ordnance and some provisions, and soon after the wind chopping about happily disengag'd them.

Some time after, having severely suffered by the winds and shoals, they fell in with the fertile islands of Baratene, where they found great plenty of provisions of all sorts, excellent spices, as nutmegs, long pepper and ginger, with lemons, oranges, cocoas, plantains, cucumbers, and particularly a fruit of the size of a bayberry, which is hard but has a pleasant taste, and when boiled is soft, and easy of digestion. This island also produces gold, silver, copper, and sulphur. The natives are far from being disagreeable; but their humanity and integrity render them most amiable. They are courteous to strangers, and trade with an honesty and punctuality that ought to put christians to the blush. The men have a covering



vering only for their heads, and a piece of linen round their waist; the women have a garment which reaches from the waist to the feet, and have eight or ten bracelets on their arms, made of brass, horn, or bone, the least of which weighed two ounces each.

Weighing anchor, they left Baratene, and sailed for Java Major, where they were also honourably entertained. The island was governed by five kings, who preserved a perfect good understanding between each other. Four of whom came at once on board, and the admiral had very often the company of two or three of them at a time.

The Javans, who are a stout and warlike people, go well armed with swords, targets, and daggers, which they temper very skilfully. They wear turbans on their heads, and a piece of silk from the waist downwards, which trails on the ground. Their behaviour, with respect to their women, is very different from that of the inhabitants of the Molucco islands, who will scarcely suffer them to be seen by a stranger, while these run so far into the other extreme, that they very civilly offer them as bedfellows. They are also extremely sociable among themselves, for in every village they have a public house where they meet and bring their shares of provisions, and joining their flocks together, form one great feasty, for keeping up good fellowship among the king's subjects. They have a peculiar way of boiling rice, which they put into an earthen pot of a conical figure, open at the greater end, and perforated all over, and this is fixed in a large earthen pot

R  
 of boiling  
 rice swell  
 a small qu  
 which means  
 nistence; c  
 shes, by m  
 or whate  
 late. The  
 iled much  
 salivation,  
 nite naked fo  
 the sun; b  
 as discharge  
 The admira  
 be cleared fr  
 are in her  
 ayed, weigh  
 the Cape of Go  
 th of June;  
 with in this p  
 im, that the  
 red the pass  
 life represent  
 with which it  
 On the 22d  
 terra Leona,  
 ephants, and  
 e sea were cov  
 multiplied am  
 mons, which  
 r this long run  
 After staying  
 ooding, water  
 they weighed a  
 full

of boiling water, and set over the fire, when the rice swelling and filling the holes of the pot, at a small quantity of the water can enter, by which means the rice is brought to a very firm consistence; of this they make several agreeable dishes, by mixing it with sugar, spices, butter, or whatever else is most agreeable to their palate. The venereal disease at this time prevailed much among the inhabitants, but instead of salivation, they cured it by exposing the body quite naked for some hours to the scorching heat of the sun; by which means the noxious matter was discharged by natural perspiration.

The admiral having caused the hull of the ship to be cleared from the barnacle shells she had gathered in her long voyage, and her bottom newly painted, weighed anchor on the 26th of March for the Cape of Good Hope, which he doubled on the 6th of June; when the few obstructions he met with in this part of the voyage fully convinced him, that the Portugueze had grossly misrepresented the passage, and abused the world with false representations of the horrors and dangers with which it is attended.

On the 22d of July, the admiral arrived at Terra Leona, where he and the crew saw many elephants, and some trees, which hanging over the sea were covered with oysters; that lived and multiplied among them. With these, and the provisions, which were very plentiful, the crew, after this long run, were much refreshed.

After staying two days, which they spent in wooding, watering, and taking in refreshments, they weighed anchor, and on the 20th were off the

the Canaries, but being sufficiently stocked with necessaries they continued their voyage to Plymouth, where they arrived on Monday the 26th of September 1580, and according to their own account Sunday the 25th, after having spent in compassing the globe, two years, 10 months, and a few days.

No private subject was ever more applauded than admiral Drake for this voyage, which gave England the glory of having produced the first commander that ever sailed round the world; a commander whose valour made the English feared, while his humanity shewed that they were worthy of being beloved. Queen Elizabeth herself was so highly pleased with his whole conduct, that in the beginning of the next year, on the 4th of April 1581, she did him the honour of dining on board his ship at Deptford, where she gave her a magnificent entertainment, and her majesty there conferred upon him the dignity of knighthood. This ship was preserved many years at Deptford, as a very great curiosity, and when it was almost entirely decayed, a chair was made out of it, and sent as a present to the university of Oxford, where it is still to be seen.

THE States

V O  
S C H O V T

R  
W C  
the rise and design  
the Texel, and  
bomba, near Sic  
the country. T  
ger of being los  
land on King's si  
tally burnt.

THE States  
is having grante  
East-India compa  
subjects from car  
ward beyond the  
eastward through  
prohibition gave g  
ants who were  
their own exper  
g it a little unjust

T H E  
V O Y A G E

O F  
SCHOV TEN and Le MAIR,

R O U N D T H E

W O R L D

C H A P. I

*the rise and design of this voyage. They sail from the Texel, and arrive at the islands of Mautrahamba, near Sierra Leona, with some account of the country. They sail to Port Desire, are in danger of being lost upon the rocks, but escape, and land on King's island, where the Horn is accidentally burnt.*

T H E States General of the United Provinces having granted an exclusive charter to the East-India company, prohibiting all their other subjects from carrying on any trade to the eastward beyond the Cape of Good Hope, or to the westward through the streights of Magellan, this prohibition gave great offence to many rich merchants who were desirous of making discoveries at their own expence, and could not help think it a little unjust, that the government should thus,

thus, against the laws of nature, but those passages which Providence had left free. Among the rest was Mr. Le Maire, a rich merchant of Amsterdam, who earnestly desired to employ part of that wealth he had acquired by trade, in obtaining fame as a discoverer. With this view he made application to Mr. William Cornelius Schovten, of Horn, a person in easy circumstances, who had been three times to the East-Indies, and asked his opinion, whether it might not be possible to find another passage into the Southern Seas than by the straits of Magellan, and whether it was not likely that the countries to the south of that passage might afford as rich commodities as either the East or West Indies. Mr. Schovten answered that there was great reason to believe that such a passage might be discovered, and still stronger reasons to confirm what he conjectured as to the riches of the southern countries.

After many conversations upon the same subject; they at last resolved to attempt such a discovery, from a persuasion that the States general could not intend by the above exclusive charter to preclude their subjects from discovering countries to the south, by a new passage distinct from that mentioned in the charter; and it was agreed that Le Maire and his friends should advance one half towards the necessary expence of the voyage, and Schovten and his friends the other.

For this voyage such preparations were made that every thing was ready in the space of two months; and the seamen entering into general articles to go wherever their masters and super-

goes should  
unusual a co  
ry wages;  
gage in it,  
none but the  
skill and fid

These ext  
crecy that w  
only at Am  
people reaso  
according to  
people givin  
while the  
called all w  
pany.

Two ships  
the largest o  
was 360 ton  
swivels, and  
pinnacle with  
landing of m  
nelison Schov  
Le Maire, th  
ed the exped  
was the Horn  
eight guns, f  
ed by John C  
On the 4th  
the Texel, a  
Downs, took  
an English g  
English carpe  
sailed from th  
floored betwe

goes should require; they, in consideration of so unusual a condition, were to receive extraordinary wages; and the eagerness of the sailors to engage in it, gave them an opportunity of chusing none but the most experienced mariners, on whose skill and fidelity they could depend.

These extraordinary preparations, with the secrecy that was observed, caused a great noise not only at Amsterdam, but all over Holland, where people reasoned on the intention of this voyage according to their several capacities; the common people giving them the name of the Gold-finders, while the merchants, with greater propriety, called all who contributed to it the South-Company.

Two ships were fitted out on this expedition, the largest of which was called the Unity; she was 360 tons burden, carried 19 guns, with 12 swivels, and 65 men. She had also on board a pinnace with sails, another to row, a launch for landing of men, and a small boat. William Cornelison Schovten was master and pilot, and James Le Maire, the son of the gentleman who proposed the expedition, was supercargo. The other was the Horn of only 110 tons burthen, carrying eight guns, four swivels, and 22 men, commanded by John Cornelison Schovten.

On the 4th of June, 1615, they sailed out of the Texel, and on the 17th anchored in the Downs, took in fresh water at Dover, and hired an English gunner. They afterwards hired an English carpenter at Plymouth, and on the 28th sailed from that port. On the 13th of July they steered between the island Teneriff and Grand Canaria,

Canaria, on the 20th in the morning fell in with Cape Verd, where they took in fresh water. On the 21st of August, they saw the high land of Sierra Leona, and the islands of Madrabomba, which lie on its south-point. They attempted to land by running to the point over the shallows of St. Ann, but finding that impracticable, steered to the above islands, which are three in number, very high, and lie in a row, half a league from Sierra Leona.

They anchored a league from one of these islands, which appeared to be full of bogs and marshes, and one entire waste, like a wilderness, scarce fit to entertain any inhabitants but wild beasts, and indeed not seeming to have any other. Going on shore on the 23d, they found a river, the mouth of which was so stopped up with sand and cliffs of rocks, that no ship could enter it; yet within the water was sufficiently deep, and broad enough for ships to turn about. Here they saw monkeys, wild oxen, a sort of birds that made a noise not unlike the barking of a dog, crocodiles and turtle, but met with no fruit except lemons.

On the 30th they arrived before a village that looks upon the road of Sierra Leona, where they anchored in eight fathoms of water. This village consisted of about eight or nine poor houses covered with straw, but the Moors who dwelt in them were unwilling to come on board, without having pledges left on shore to secure their safe return. However, Aris Olawson, the supercargo of the Horn, landed, and staid among them, purchasing lemons and bananas with glass beads; and

and in the  
on board.  
nity of tak  
ter, which  
a very high  
do but to pl  
fall of the w  
lemon trees  
for a few b  
ten thousand  
anchored b  
some lemo  
the woods,  
the 3d, the  
fish shaped  
lemons as c

Early on  
na, and the  
with a viol  
one of the  
them to run  
with this pl  
to change it  
fountain of  
cause of the  
of, till they  
upon the f  
found a lar  
resembling  
the bottom  
body, with  
middle: it  
planks of t  
that it flu

and in the mean time, some of the natives came on board. The ships had here a good opportunity of taking in a sufficient supply of fresh water, which pouring down in great quantities from a very high mountain, the sailors had nothing to do but to place their barrels to receive it under the fall of the water. There were also vast woods of lemon trees, which made that fruit so cheap, that for a few beads and knives, they might have had ten thousand. On the first of September, they anchored before a small river, and landing got some lemons and palmettos, took an antelope in the woods, and had good success in fishing. On the 3d, the master brought in a great shoal of fish shaped like a shoemaker's knife, and as many lemons as came to 150 for every man's share.

Early on the 4th they sailed from Sierra Leona, and the next day were strangely surprized with a violent stroke given to the lower part of one of the ships, though there was no rock for them to run upon; but while they were amused with this phenomenon, the sea about them began to change its colour, and looked as if some great fountain of blood had been opened into it. The cause of these events they were entirely ignorant of, till they came to Port Desire, and set the ship upon the strand to make her clean, when they found a large horn both in form and magnitude resembling an elephants tooth, sticking fast in the bottom of the ship. It was a firm and solid body, without any cavity or spongy matter in the middle: it had pierced through three very stout planks of the ship, and raised one of her ribs, so that it stuck at least half a foot deep in the  
 L planks,



planks, and about as much appeared without the hole, up to the place where it was broken off. And now the riddle was completely solved, this horn being the spoil of a fish that had thus rudely assaulted the ship with this piercing weapon; and after the first thrust, not being able to draw it out again, had there broken it, which was attended with such a plentiful effusion of blood, that it had discoloured the sea.

Having now failed so far that none on board, except the master, knew where they were, or whither they intended; they, upon the 25th, made known their design, of discovering a new southern passage into the great Pacific Ocean; upon which all the sailors seemed highly pleased, hoping to find some golden country, to make them amends for all their trouble and danger.

On the 7th of November, keeping a south course, they came before the haven of Port Desire, but sailing too far to the southward, missed the right channel, and entered a crooked bay, where at high tide they had but four fathoms and a half water; by which means the *Unity* lay with her stern fast a-ground, and if a brisk gale had not blown from the north-east, she would have been infallibly lost. Here they found plenty of eggs among the cliffs, and the bay afforded them mullets and smelts of sixteen inches in length, whence they gave it the name of Smelt Bay; and the sloop being sent to the Penguin Islands, returned with 150 penguins and two sea lions.

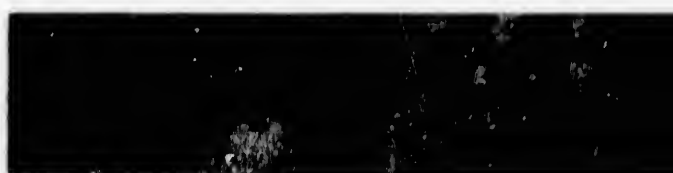
On the 8th they sailed out of Smelt Bay, and entered Port Desire, which lies in  $47^{\circ} 40'$  south latitude; but after little more than a league's sailing

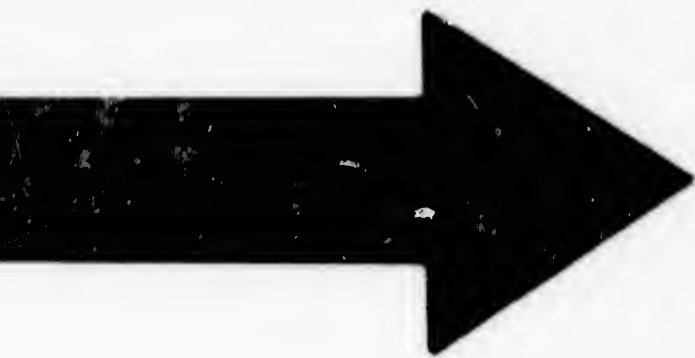
R  
ailing in the  
about, they a  
the bottom b  
wind blowing  
could not pr  
southern sho  
danger of be  
her sides upo  
that her keel  
ter. For some  
ing hard upon  
over, but tha  
upon that sid  
keel, and yet  
succeeding flo  
ther, set her u  
companion go

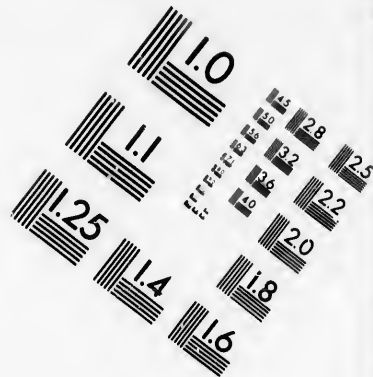
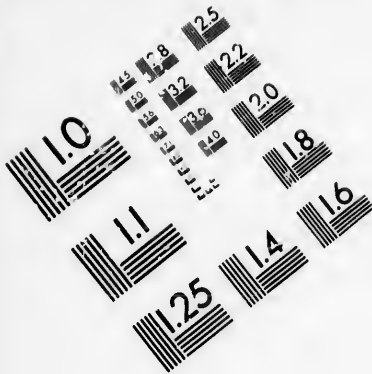
On the 9th,  
and came to l  
of black sea n  
eggs; a man  
have taken b  
hand, in each  
so that they w  
fands of them  
search of goo  
ver, but all t  
greeable taste  
beasts resembl  
and had rem  
hills they fou  
which some b  
interred, as t  
bones they ha

ailing in this bay, the wind beginning to veer about, they anchored in 20 fathoms water; but the bottom being only slippery stones, and the wind blowing hard at north-west, their anchors could not preserve them from driving upon the southern shore; so that both the ships were in danger of being wrecked. The Unity lay with her sides upon the cliffs, but the Horn stuck so that her keel was above a fathom out of the water. For some time the north-west wind by blowing hard upon her side, kept her from falling over, but that support being gone, she sunk down upon that side at least three feet lower than her keel, and yet to the surprize of every one, the succeeding flood which came on with still weather, set her upright again, and both she and her companion got clear of the danger.

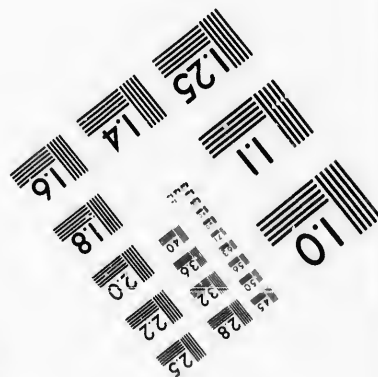
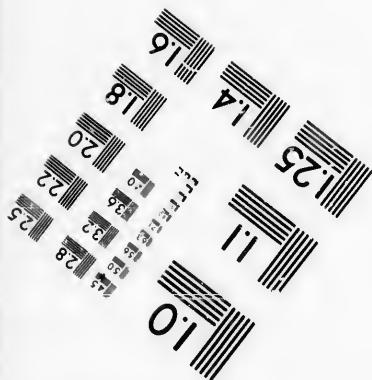
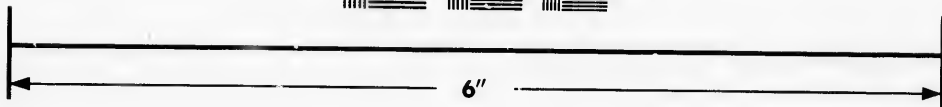
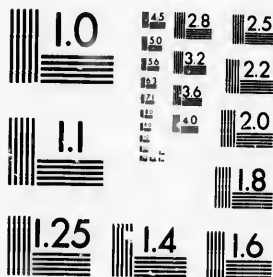
On the 9th, they went farther into the river, and came to King's Island, which they found full of black sea mews, and almost covered with their eggs; a man without straining to reach might have taken between 50 and 60 nests with his hand, in each of which were three or four eggs; so that they were soon furnished with some thousands of them. Two days after the boat went in search of good water to the south side of the river, but all they found was of a brackish disagreeable taste. They here saw ostiches, and beasts resembling harts that were extremely wild, and had remarkable long necks, and upon the hills they found great heaps of stones, under which some bodies of a monstrous size had been interred, as they judged from the length of the bones they had found.







**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

0  
14 28  
16 32 25  
18 22  
20  
18

11  
10  
5

Some days after, they careened the Unity upon King's Island, which being performed very successfully, they haled the Horn on shore, for the same purpose, placing her about 200 yards from the other ship; but while they were busy in cleaning both ships, a fire of dry reeds being placed under the Horn, the flame got into that vessel, and set her on fire, and she being 50 feet from the water side, the men were unable to do any thing towards extinguishing it, by which means she was soon consumed. However on the 20th, at high water, they launched the Unity, and the next day carried on board her every thing they had been able to save out of the Horn.

*They set fire to the Horn. are unaccounted for. Fly island and arr. Traitor island.*

*(Mirrored bleed-through text from the reverse side of the page, appearing upside down and backwards)*

CHAP.

**O**N the Port Def...  
 ing from...  
 hills cov...  
 bearing...  
 former...  
 eight-le...  
 brisk cu...  
 imagine...  
 them, t...  
 when t...  
 guins, a...  
 forced...  
 running...  
 The...  
 land, w...  
 south-e...  
 they ca...  
 that w...

## CHAPTER II.

*They set sail in the Unity from Port Desire. Discovered the new Streights, and pass round Cape Horn. Then sailing to the island Juan Fernandés, are unable to land, and proceed to Dog island. An account of the island without Ground, and of its inhabitants. A description of Water island and Fly island. They seize a strange kind of bark, and arrive at Cocoa island, and afterwards at Traitor's island, whence they proceeded to Hope-island. An account of its inhabitants.*

**O**N the 13th of January, they set sail from Port Desire, and on the 24th saw land, stretching from the east to the south, with very high hills covered with ice, and soon after other land, bearing east from it, as high and rugged as the former. These lands they imagined lay about eight leagues asunder, and from there being a brisk current, that ran by them to the southward, imagined there might be a good passage between them, they therefore made up to this opening, when they saw an incredible number of Penguins, and such shoals of whales, that they were forced to proceed with great caution for fear of running the ship upon them.

The next day they got up close by the east land, which upon the north side extends east-south-east as far as the eye can follow it. This they called Staten Land or States Land, and to that which lay to the west, they gave the name



of Maurice Land. They observed that there were good roads, and sandy bays, plenty of fish, porpoises, penguins, and some sorts of fowl, but the adjacent land seemed quite bare of trees and woods. At their entrance into this passage, having a north wind, they briskly sailed to the southward, and afterwards to the south-west, meeting with prodigious waves, that came rolling along before the wind. This, with the depth of the water, gave them full assurance that the great South Sea was now before them, into which they had almost made their way by a passage of their own discovery. The sea mews were here larger than swans, and their wings when extended to their full length, spread about the compass of a fathom. They would come and tamely sit down upon the ship, and suffer themselves to be taken with the hand, without any endeavours to fly away.

On the 29th, they had the prospect of two islands set round with cliffs lying to the westward, to which they gave the name of Barnevelt's Island, and taking a north-west course from thence, saw land again, which was high, and covered with snow, and ended in a sharp point, which they called Cape Horn. They now held their course to the westward, with a strong current, yet great billows rolled upon them from the west. On the 31st, they passed Cape Horn, and on the 12th of February, plainly discovered the Straights of Magellan, lying to the eastward, and being now certain of their having made a new and happy discovery, their general joy was expressed by every person on board having a cup of

wine,

wine, wh  
ny; and  
found pa  
It is obse  
through  
land now  
course of  
strong cur  
their sail  
the joy  
improver  
helped to  
and the c

On the  
of Juan  
were sick  
these isla  
the large  
their cou  
means th  
not being  
chor. T  
found th  
count of  
having  
thickets,  
down fr  
ing. T  
with the  
lobsters  
seen a  
days, th  
by the la  
fectual.

wine, which went three times round the company; and at the same time they gave to this new found passage the name of Streights le Maire. It is observable that all the time of their sailing through these streights, and about the southern land now first discovered, they had a settled course of bad weather, a thick and foggy air, and strong currents. All which added together, made their sailing in these streights very tedious. But the joy of this discovery, the hopes of farther improvements, with the comforts of the bottle, helped to remove the sense of that tedious run, and the dangers they had entertained.

On the 28th, they resolved to sail for the islands of Juan Fernandes, in order to give those who were sick and weary proper refreshment; they saw these islands on the first of March. The road of the larger lies on the east point, and they shaped their course to the western side of it, by which means they were reduced to the inconvenience of not being able to get near enough the land to anchor. This made them dispatch their boat to sound the depth, which returned with an account of there being good anchoring, and of their having seen a very lovely valley full of trees and thickets, refreshed with streams of water running down from the hills, and variety of animals grazing. They brought great plenty of fish along with them, the greatest number of which were lobsters and crabs, and observed that they had seen a great many seals. The two following days, they repeated their attempt to anchor close by the land; but all their endeavours were ineffectual. The men however still continued fishing,

ing, in which they had such success that they took almost two tons of fish with only hooks, in the small time in which some of the company went to fetch water. At last finding the island thus inaccessible, they resolved to pursue their voyage.

On the 3d of April, when they got into  $15^{\circ} 12'$  the men from having a good state of health were seized with the flux, but at the same time they saw a little low island at three leagues distance, which they got up to at noon, but could find no bottom, and therefore sent out the shallop. The men who went on shore found no other refreshment but some herbs that tasted like sea-vygrals; they observed a very silent sort of dogs on the island, that could neither bark, snarl, or make any other noise, for which reason they called it Dog Island. It lies in  $15^{\circ} 12'$  and they judged it to be 925 leagues distant from the coast of Peru.

On the 14th, sailing to the eastward they saw a large low island, and at sun-set being about a league from it, an Indian canoe advanced to meet them. The men who were naked, had long black hair, and their bodies were of a reddish colour. They made signs to the Dutch to come on shore, and called to them in their language, and thought the Dutch answered them in their own, the Spanish, Moluccan, and Javan tongues, yet the Indians could not understand them. When they got up to the island, they still found no bottom, and no change of water, though they were within a musquet shot of the shore. Here the Indians and they had another unintelligible conference; but not all the signs made by the Dutch could

ould prevail on them to come on board, nor would the Dutch go on shore to them, though they still kept talking and pointing to one another. Therefore leaving these people they steered to the southward, and having made ten leagues that night, sailed in the morning close along by the shore, on which many of these naked people were standing, and seemed calling to them to land. Soon after, one of the canoes put off towards the ship, but though the men would not come near it, they ventured up to the shallop, when the Dutch gave them beads and knives, and several other things, with which they were highly pleased; and this at last emboldened them to come a little nearer the ship, though they would not go on board, but got back into the shallop. Indeed they did not seem to have any great reason for desiring their company, for they appeared to be entirely void of honesty, and were so fond of iron, that they stole some nails that lay in the cabin window. When the Dutch gave them wine, they drank the liquor and kept the cup, and when they threw a rope to bring them to the ship, they would neither use the rope nor return it. In short, whatever they laid their hands on they considered as their own, nor was there any way of recovering it, without making use of force. These people were entirely naked, except wearing a small mat round the waist; and what seemed very singular, and gave them a very odd appearance, their skins were all over painted with the representation of snakes, dragons, and the like reptiles.

The

The Dutch being disposed to try if any thing was to be got on the island, sent the shallop with eight musqueteers, and others of the ship's company on shore, but they were no sooner landed than 30 of the natives rushed out of a wood, armed with great clubs, long staves, and slings, and attempted to seize the shallop, but the musqueteers firing among them they fled. This island they called The Island without Ground, from their not being able to anchor near it. It is not broad, but something long and full of trees, which they supposed to be cocoas and palmettos. It lies in 5<sup>th</sup> south latitude, and about 100 leagues from Dog Island.

Finding that nothing was to be done here, they steered to the westward, and on the 16th came to another island at 15<sup>th</sup> distance. It was very lowland, with many trees growing on its sides, but they here found no food except a few herbs like those in Dog Island, with some crabs and other shell fish. It however afforded them good fresh water, which they found in a pit near the shore, and the pottage they made of the herbs gathered there, was of great service to those who were troubled with the flux. This they called Water Island, from its furnishing them with a supply of water.

On the 18th, they reached another island situated to the south west, at about 20 leagues distance from Water-Island, and the boat being sent to sound the depth, found a bottom by a point of land, near which was a gentle stream of water. Upon this the empty calks was sent in the boat, but after the men had taken great pains in land-

ing,

if any thing  
shallop with  
the ship's com-  
panion landed  
wood, arm-  
flings, and  
the musque-  
This island  
ound, from  
It is not  
rees, which  
netros. It  
oo leagues  
here, they  
6th came  
was very  
its sides,  
ew herbs  
rabs and  
em good  
near the  
he herbs  
ose who  
called  
with a  
nd situ-  
les dis-  
ng sent  
oint of  
water.  
boat,  
land-  
ing,

ing, they were frightened away at the sight of  
one of the natives; when getting into their boat  
there appeared five or six more of the Indians  
upon the shore, who finding they were gone off,  
soon returned into the woods. But though they  
escaped from the natives, of whom they were un-  
der great apprehensions, they had other very  
troublesome enemies, that struck very close to  
them, of which they brought many millions  
along with them out of the woods. These were  
a sort of black flies, of which there were such  
prodigious swarms, that the men returned cover-  
ed with them from head to foot. Their hands  
and feet were so beset with them, that it was im-  
possible to form a judgment of their complexion,  
and their cloaths were so entirely hidden by these  
multitudes of these insects, that they composed  
a kind of living apparel. Besides, their very boats  
and oars were all over in the same dress as them-  
selves; so that when they came back, the plague  
of flies began to rage in the ship, and every man  
was employed in defending his face and eyes as  
well as he could, for it was difficult for any  
of them to open their mouths either to speak or  
eat, without taking in a mouthful of them. This  
dreadful persecution lasted about three or four  
days, during which, the men were employed in  
killing them with fly-flaps, which did such exe-  
cution, that within this time their sufferings were  
at an end, and few of the flies left to torment  
them. To this place they gave the name of Fly  
Island, and by the help of a good gale left it as  
fast as they could.

On the 9th of May, they were in 15° 20' south latitude, and guessed they were 15 leagues from the coast of Peru, when they perceived a bark sailing towards them, which they went to meet, and gave her a gun or two, to make her strike; but those in the bark not understanding the language of the guns, the Dutch sent their shallop with ten musqueteers, to take her upon which she endeavoured to make her escape, but the shallop intercepting her, some of her men threw themselves and their goods overboard; but when the shallop boarded her, those who were left made not the least resistance, but quietly surrendered to the conquerors, who used them very kindly, dressed their wounds, saved the lives of some who had leaped into the sea, and entertained all of them in the ship. There were about 23 of these people, among whom were eight women and several children. They were of a reddish complexion, and had no other covering except round the waist. The men had long curled black hair, while that of the women was short, and they all appeared remarkable for their neatness and cleanliness. Their bark was of a peculiar figure and structure, it consisting only of two canoes fastened together, with several planks laid across from one canoe to the other, hanging over a good way on both sides, and being made very flat and close above. At the end of one of the canoes was a mast, with a sail made of mats. They had no compass, nor charts, nor any other furniture for the sea, but a few fishing hooks, the upper part of which was stone, and the other black bone, tortoise-shell, or mother of pearl.

crowns of  
ed ever  
have in  
Jamaica  
north lat  
longitud  
middle a  
each end  
niola, an  
of 150 le  
and Car  
nued rid  
through  
ed the l  
are othe  
part is v  
south fi  
channels  
every da  
ing a fr  
wards c  
nels ext  
vered w  
timber,  
ten, and  
roots int  
savanna  
wood, a  
the four  
ride ma  
ascent;  
circled  
green a  
drought

in 15° 20  
 were 15  
 en they per  
 which they  
 two, to make  
 understand  
 Dutch sent  
 to take her  
 her escape,  
 of her men  
 board, but  
 who were  
 quately fur  
 them very  
 he lives of  
 entertain  
 about 23  
 ht women  
 a reddish  
 ng except  
 arled black  
 short, and  
 neatness  
 ecular fi  
 f two ca  
 anks, laid  
 ging over  
 ade very  
 me of the  
 of mats.  
 any other  
 ooks, the  
 the other  
 of pear  
 The

rown of Great Britain, to which it has belong-  
 ed ever since; and is the noblest possession we  
 have in those parts.

Jamaica is situated in between 17 and 18°  
 north latitude, and between 76 and 79° west-  
 longitude. It is 140 miles in length, and in the  
 middle about 60 in breadth, growing less towards  
 each end. It is about 20 leagues east of Hispani-  
 niola, and as many south of Cuba, and is upwards  
 of 150 leagues to the northward of Porto Bello  
 and Carthagena. The whole island is one conti-  
 nued ridge of hills, which run from east to west  
 through the middle of it, and are generally call-  
 ed the Blue Mountains; and on each side there  
 are other hills much lower. The mountainous  
 part is very steep and furrowed on the north and  
 south sides of the highest hills, by very deep  
 channels, made by violent rains, which almost  
 every day fall on the mountains, and first wear-  
 ing a small channel for their passage, and after-  
 wards carrying all before them, make their chan-  
 nels extremely deep. All the high lands are co-  
 vered with woods, in which there is very good  
 timber, though the soil is there extremely bar-  
 ren, and they are obliged to shoot their fibrous  
 roots into the crannies of the rocks. Most of the  
 savannahs, or plains fit for pasture and cleared of  
 wood, are like our meadow land, and lie near  
 the south side of the island, where a person may  
 ride many miles without meeting with the least  
 ascent; some of these plains are within land en-  
 circled with hills. These savannahs are very  
 green and pleasant after rain, but after a long  
 drought look yellow and parched.

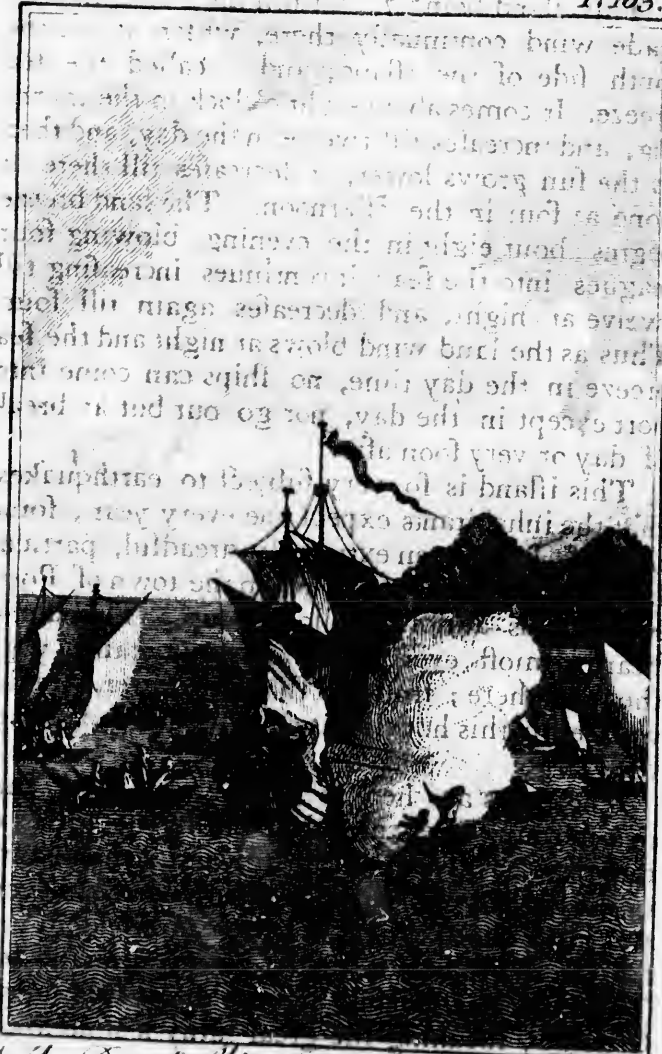


The chief ports in the island are Port-Royal, which is a fine capacious harbour; Old Harbour, which lies seven or eight miles west of St. Jago; Port Morant at the east end, and Point Negril, at the west end of the island; besides which there are several others on the south and north sides. But it is dangerous approaching the coast without a pilot, on account of the coral rocks with which it is almost surrounded.

There are near 100 rivers in Jamaica, but none of them navigable; for rising in the mountains in the middle of the island, they precipitate themselves down the rocks to the north and south, falling into the sea before they have run many miles, and frequently carry down with them, large trees and great pieces of rock, and it is very common to have cataracts among the mountains 50 or 60 feet high: Yet in dry years water is very scarce in the savannahs distant from rivers, so that many cattle die with driving to water; and it is remarkable that some rivers in the mountains rise above and sink under ground in many places, and in particular the Rio d'Oro falls and rises two or three times. Some of the springs and rivers petrify their channels and stop their course by a cement, which unites the gravel and sand in their bottoms. There are several hot springs, and also many salt springs which form salt lagunas, or great ponds, particularly Rivottoa-Pond, which receives a great deal of water by a river, and yet has no visible rivulet or discharge running from it; and in these and other ponds formed by the sea water, great plenty of salt is made by the heat of the sun exhaling the moisture.

This





*The Dutch Ships defeat 23 Indian Ships  
 & 45 Canoes, manned by the Inhabitants of  
 Traitors Island.*

This  
 trade w  
 south  
 breeze.  
 ing, an  
 as the  
 none a  
 begins  
 leagues  
 twelve  
 Thus a  
 breeze  
 port ex  
 of day  
 This  
 that th  
 of the  
 larly i  
 Royal  
 heard  
 the rai  
 ver see  
 very l  
 The  
 in a m  
 the tr  
 in the  
 wet in  
 fogs i  
 The r  
 Gener  
 May a  
 full m  
 night,

This island being  $7^{\circ}$  within the tropic, has the trade wind continually there, which is on the south side of the island, and is called the sea breeze. It comes about eight o'clock in the morning, and increases till twelve in the day, and then as the sun grows lower, it decreases till there is none at four in the afternoon. The land breeze begins about eight in the evening, blowing four leagues into the sea: it continues increasing till twelve at night, and decreases again till four. Thus as the land wind blows at night and the sea breeze in the day time, no ships can come into port except in the day, nor go out but at break of day or very soon after.

This island is so very subject to earthquakes, that the inhabitants expect one every year; some of these have been extremely dreadful, particularly in the year 1692, when the town of Port-Royal was almost swallowed up. Thunder is heard almost every day in the mountains, with the rains there; frost and snow, however, are never seen in this hot climate, but hail is sometimes very large.

The dews are here so great within land, that in a morning the water drops from the leaves of the trees, as if it had rained; and a man riding in the night, will find his cloaths and hair very wet in a short time; but there are seldom any fogs in the plains or sandy places near the sea. The rains are violent, and the drops very large. Generally speaking the great rainy seasons are in May and October, when they begin at the new or full moon, and continue day and night for a fortnight, so that sir Hans Sloane observes, that all

P. 183.

Lodges's  
ships  
of

184. The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

the level places are laid some inches under water. In the month of January is also expected a rainy season; but this is neither so constant, nor so violent as the two others.

As to the produce of the island, it has all the tropical fruits, as plantains, coconuts, pine apples, cocoa, or the chocolate nut, pimento, cotton-trees, woods for dying, mahogany, and manchineel wood; ginger, and several medicinal drugs and gums. As this island produces more of the cacao or chocolate nuts than any of our plantations, we shall here give a particular account of them.

The cacao nuts grow on a tree, in green, red and yellow pods, every pod having in it, three, four, or five kernels, about the bigness and shape of heshnuts, which are separated from each other by a substance like the pulp of a roasted apple, that is moderately sharp and sweet, from which these kernels or nuts are taken when ripe and cured by drying. The body of a cacao-tree is commonly four inches in diameter, five feet in height, and about twelve to the top of the tree. These trees are very different, for some shoot up in two or three bodies, and others only in one; their leaves, unless in very young trees, are many of them dead, and most of them discoloured; a bearing tree generally yields from two to eight pounds of nuts a year, growing out of the body or great limbs and boughs, and at the same place there are both blossoms, young and ripe fruit. These trees are always planted under the shade. Some set them under plantain trees, and some in the woods. The nuts are cured by their being cut down when ripe, and laid to sweat three or four

four da  
ing the  
the nuts  
with p  
about f  
to dry  
become  
Pim  
of Jam  
pepper  
found  
and sp  
thigh  
covered  
grey co  
have  
when  
the tw  
which  
berries  
berries  
ripe t  
are th  
a sma  
feeds  
Th  
island  
it is g  
felled  
grew  
from  
grae  
flower  
tor ac  
and

four days in the pods, which is done by throwing them on heaps; after this the pods are cut; the nuts taken out and put into a trough, covered with plantain leaves, where they sweat again about sixteen or twenty days; they are then put to dry three or four weeks in the sun, and then become of a dark reddish colour.

Pimento is another of the natural productions of Jamaica, from whence it is called Jamaica pepper, that being the chief place where it is found. The Pimento tree is generally very tall and spreading, with a trunk as thick as a man's thigh; it rises straight above 30 feet high, and is covered with an extraordinary smooth bark of a grey colour; it then spreads into branches, which have leaves resembling those of a bay tree, and when bruised are very odiferous. The ends of the twig are branched into bunches of flowers, which falling off, are succeeded by bunches of berries crowned with four small leaves: these berries are at first small and greenish, but when ripe they are bigger than juniper berries; they are then black, smooth and shining, and contain a small green aromatic pulp, with two large seeds separated by a membrane.

This tree grows on all the hilly parts of the island of Jamaica, but chiefly on the north side; it is generally left standing when other trees are felled, and is sometimes planted where it never grew before, on account of the great profit arising from the fruit, which is annually exported in great quantities into Europe. The Pimento tree flowers in June, July and August, sooner or later according to the situation, and different sea-

M 3

son for rains, and after it flowers, the fruit soon ripens, but in clear open grounds, it is sooner ripe than in thick woods.

There is no great difficulty in curing or preserving this fruit: this is for the most part done by the negroes, who climb the trees, and pull off the twigs with the unripe green fruit, after which they carefully separate the fruit from the twigs and leaves, and expose it to the sun for many days, from its rising to its setting; spreading the berries thin on cloths, turning them frequently, and carefully avoiding the dews. By this means they become a little wrinkled, and from a green, change to a brown colour, when they are fit for the market; being of different sizes, but commonly of the bigness of black pepper, and resembling in smell and taste a mixture of spices, from whence it is called Allspice. The more fragrant and smaller they are, they are accounted the better. That great physician sir Hans Sloan observes, that this is deservedly reckoned the best, most temperate, mild and innocent of all spices.

The wild cinnamon, or more properly canella alba tree, also grows in this Island. Its trunk is about the bigness of that of the Pimento-tree, and rises 20 or 30 feet high, having many branches and twigs hanging downwards, and forming a very beautiful top. The bark consists of two parts; the outward bark is as thin as a shilling, of a whitish ash or grey colour, with some white spots here and there upon it, and several shallow furrows of a darker colour, running variously through it. This bark is of an aromatic taste. The inward bark is as thick as a crown piece, smooth,

smooth,  
ward,  
tatie, for  
shoot out  
order, it  
inches in  
of a yell  
shining  
The end  
of scarle  
succeede  
the size  
thin pul  
regular  
All th  
hot and  
tree is w  
plantati  
and it is  
and lett  
sort of  
of all ot  
consum  
mach,  
loses its  
bark.  
and is f  
sage-Fr  
As g  
duced  
lar acc  
ed and  
The se  
round,

smooth, and of a whiter colour than the outward, it has a much more biting and aromatic taste, somewhat like that of cloves. The leaves shoot out near the ends of the twigs without any order, standing on foot stalks, each of them two inches in length, and one in breadth. They are of a yellowish green colour, and are smooth and shining without any incisures about their edges. The ends of the twigs are branched into bunches of scarlet or purple flowers, which falling off, are succeeded by clusters of roughish green berries, of the size of a large pea, that contain a pale, green, thin pulp, and four black shining seeds of an irregular figure.

All the parts of this tree, when fresh, are very hot and aromatic, but in the inward bark of the tree is what is chiefly in use both in the English plantations in the West Indies, and in Europe, and it is easily cured by only cutting off the bark and letting it dry in the shade. The ordinary sort of people, in the West Indies, use it instead of all other spices, it being thought very good to consume the immoderate humidity of the stomach, to help digestion, and expel wind. Rum loses its disagreeable smell if mixed with this bark. The tree grows in the sayamah woods, and is found on each side the road between Passage-Fort, and the town of St. Jago de la Vega.

As great quantities of indigo have been produced in Jamaica, we shall here give a particular account of the manner in which it is cultivated and prepared. It thrives best in sandy ground. The seed from whence it is raised, is yellow, round, and some what less than a tare. The soil



188 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH

is made light by hoeing; then trenches are dug like those our gardeners prepare for pease, into which the seed is put about March: it grows ripe in eight weeks time, and fresh broken ground will spring up about three feet high, but in others to no more than eighteen inches. The stalk is full of leaves of a deep green colour, and will, from the first sowing, yield many crops in one year. When it is ripe it is cut, and steeped in hot water twenty four hours, after which it is cleared from the first water, and put into proper cisterns, where, when it has been carefully beaten, it settles in about eighteen hours. In these cisterns are several taps, which let the clear water run out, and the thick is put into bags of about three feet long, made commonly of osnaburghs, which being hung up, all the liquid part drops away, and when it will stop no longer, what remains is put into wooden boxes about three feet long, fourteen inches wide, and one and a half deep; these boxes are placed in the sun till the indigo is very hot, and then taken in till the extrem heat is over; and this is repeated till it is sufficiently dried.

In land that proves proper for indigo, the labour of one hand, will in a year's time produce between eighty and a hundred weight; if no accidents happen; for indigo, as well as other commodities in those parts is subject to many; the most common are blasting and worms, by which it is frequently destroyed.

There is plenty of cotton in Jamaica, which is finer than that in the Caribbee-islands. There are besides, three sorts of bark used by the rangers,

ners, who  
in six we  
shoes. Th  
woods as  
The island  
herbs, as  
sia, tamar  
cane is the  
inhabitants  
this island  
hogheads

As to the  
ous company  
to the bet  
100 000  
negroes

The En  
land, and  
India com  
unwhole  
ed great  
common  
fluxes, an

al odt  
produ  
on li  
red  
ed; you  
didw  
which  
The  
ed  
near

ISH  
are dug  
use, into  
ows ripe  
ground  
n others  
stalk is  
nd will,  
s in one  
ped in  
cleared  
cisterns,  
it fer-  
cisterns  
ter run  
t three  
which  
away,  
remains  
long,  
deep,  
igo is  
n heat  
iently  
e la-  
oduce  
to ac-  
corns  
; the  
which  
ch is  
here  
rans-  
ners,

in A M E R I C A. 189

ners, who tan better here than in England, and in six weeks the leather is ready to work into shoes. There are here also abundance of dyers woods, as fustic, red-wood, log-wood, and others. The island also abounds in drugs, and medicinal herbs, as guaiacum, china root, sarsaparilla, cassia, tamarinds, yenceloes, &c. But the sugar cane is the chief glory of Jamaica, for by this the inhabitants have acquired immense riches, and this island is said annually to produce near 100,000 Hogheads.

As to the number of people in the island, various computations have been made, but according to the best accounts, there are said to be near 100,000 white people, and four times as many negroes.

The English eat much the same food as in England, and some other sorts, as bottle, bread of India corn, yams and cassavi, root. The water is unwholesome near the sea coasts, and has destroyed great numbers of seamen at Port Royal. The common distempers of the country are fevers, fluxes, and the dry gripes.

In the island proper for indigo, which produces about one hundred weight in a year's time produces between eighty and a hundred weight, as well as other commodities in those parts, in which the most common are indigo and worms, by which it is frequently destroyed.

There is plenty of cotton in Jamaica, which is raised in the island. These are the best sorts of bark used by the natives.

C H A P T E R

*The manner in which Carolina was settled by the English, after the attempts made by the Spaniards and French. The climate and soil of Carolina. A description of Charles-Town, and Beaufort, with the produce of the country, and the manner in which the people prepare their turpentine, resin, tar, and pitch. And a short view of the quantity of their cattle and the nature of their exports.*

CAROLINA is a part of that extensive country in North-America, which was formerly comprehended under the name of Florida. It was first discovered by Sebastian Cabot, and afterwards received the name of Florida from Juan Ponce de Leon.

The Spaniards endeavoured several times to make settlements in this country; but after many unfortunate and expensive expeditions, being entirely discouraged, abandoned it for several years. At length the French, perceiving that this large tract of land was neglected by the Spaniards, admiral Coligny sent John Ribaut, who formed a settlement here in the reign of Charles IX. and having built a fort, called it Charles-Fort, giving the name of Port-Royal to the harbour.

However, the civil war raging in France, Ribaut's soldiers mutinued for want of supplies; for though the natives were very kind to them out of hatred to the Spaniards, they could not furnish them with many of the necessaries they wanted;

LISH

bled by the Spaniards of Carolina. Beaufort, the manner, refine, the quantity, xpo. ts.

extensive formerly Florida. It and after- Juan

times to ter many being en- ral years. His large ards, ad- formed a IX. and t, giving

nce, Ri- lies; for hem out not fur- ies they wanted;

The Division of the Kingdoms

CHAP. XVII.

The manner in which Carolina was settled by the English, after the ancient mode by the Spaniards and French. The climate and soil of Carolina. A description of Charles-Town, and Beaufort. The produce of the country, and the manner in which the people prepare their sugar, rum, tar, and pitch. And a short view of the quantity of their cattle and the nature of their crops.

CAROLINA is a part of that extensive country in North-America, which was formerly comprehended under the name of Florida. It was first discovered by Sebastian Cabot, and afterwards received the name of Florida from Juan Ponce de Leon.

The Spaniards endeavoured several times to make settlements in this country, but their projects were all abortive, and their expeditions, being only discouraged, abandoned in for the most part. At length the French, perceiving that their part of land was neglected by the Spaniards, sent a small colony from John Ribault, who first made a settlement here in the reign of Charles IX. having built a fort, called in Charles's time the name of Fort-Royal to the honour of his Majesty.

However, the civil war raging in France, the king's soldiers maintained for want of supplies. Although the natives were very kind to them, and of service to the Spaniards, they could not assist them with any of the necessaries they wanted.



*The Entertainment of the Jews Kings, in Horn Island.*

wanted ; I  
 discoveries  
 France ; b  
 to such ex  
 the crew,  
 others, ha  
 English f  
 provisions  
 cluded in  
 rants, adu  
 sent ; and  
 other vet  
 sions.

The F  
 of this p  
 ships dro  
 killed Ri  
 them qua  
 suffered t

The F  
 outrage o  
 their bei  
 who had  
 Indians b  
 ly wait  
 which ha  
 a French  
 out three  
 280 men  
 taken Fo  
 therein t  
 forts wh  
 in the fa  
 tification

wanted; Ribaut, therefore, having made some discoveries in the east part of Florida, returned to France; but in his passage the men were reduced to such extremity, that they killed and eat one of the crew, and would probably have done so by others, had they not providentially met with an English ship, which supplied them with some provisions. Two years after, a peace being concluded in France between the papists and protestants, admiral Coligny procured more ships to be sent; and some time after Ribaut followed with other vessels and a supply of men and provisions.

The French now began to conceive great hopes of this plantation, when a squadron of Spanish ships drove the French out of the fort, basely killed Ribaut and 600 men, after having given them quarter, and obliged the few whom they suffered to remain alive, to return to France.

The French king was the less moved with this outrage committed on his subjects, on account of their being protestants: however Peter Melanda, who had dislodged the French, so provoked the Indians by his cruelty and injustice, that they only waited for an opportunity to be revenged, which happened soon after: for capt. de Gorgues, a French gentleman, at his own expence, fitted out three stout ships, and sailing to Carolina with 280 men, was assisted by the Indians, and having taken Fort Charles put all the Spaniards he found therein to the sword. They had built two other forts which he easily reduced, served the garrison in the same manner, and then demolished the fortifications. It does not appear that mons. de

Gorgues

Gorgues made any settlement here, or that the Spaniards endeavoured to recover the country, which from the year 1671 lay deserted by all European nations, till the reign of Charles II. king of England. In 1621 several English families flying from the massacres committed by the Indians in Virginia and New England, were driven upon these coasts, and settled in the province of Malacca near the head of the river May, where they became a kind of missionaries among the Malicians and Apalachites, and in the year 1653 Mr. Brigstock, an Englishman went to Apalachia, where he was honourably entertained by his countrymen, who were there before. And this person wrote an account of this settlement.

Such was the situation of things, when after this country had been abandoned by the French for near 100 years, king Charles II. made a grant of this province in 1663, to Edward earl of Clarendon, lord high chancellor of England, George duke of Albemarle, William lord Craven, Anthony lord Ashley, sir George Carteret, sir William Berkeley, and sir John Colleton, from the north-end of Luck Island, within 36<sup>th</sup> of north latitude, to the river San Mattheo, which borders on the coast of Florida, and is within 31<sup>st</sup> of north latitude, and to the westward as far as the south seas.

These proprietors afterwards obtained another grant which somewhat varied the bounds of the province, by fixing its northern frontier at Carotock river, in 36<sup>th</sup> 30. north latitude, and its southern frontier in 29<sup>th</sup> within which bounds both the Carolinas, and the new province of Georgia are included,

The

The plan of government for this new colony was struck out by that great statesman, Anthony Earl of Shaftsbury, and digested into form by the justly celebrated Mr. John Locke; but after it had been in the possession of the proprietors or their heirs, for about 60 years, seven of them sold their shares to the crown for 17,500 l. each proprietor who had a whole share, having 2,500 l. and the quit-rents, and other incomes due to these proprietors, amounting to about 9000 l. they also sold them to the crown for 5000 l. This surrender was confirmed by act of parliament, in the year 1728, when the remaining one eighth of the property in the possession of the lord Carteret, was confirmed to him and his heirs. And in consequence of the powers granted to his majesty by this act, he has ever since appointed the governors of North and South Carolina.

This province is seated between the extremes of heat and cold; but yet the heat is more troublesome in summer than the cold in winter, this last season being very short, and frosty mornings frequently succeeded by warm days. The air is for the most part serene and clear, both in summer and winter; yet the inhabitants have their winter rains, and sometimes very heavy showers about midsummer; especially if the wind changes suddenly from the south east to the north-west, when it blows exceeding cold, and brings distempers on those, who do not take care to guard against it. To those who live regularly and use ordinary precaution, the country is generally healthful. But persons who after a hot day expose themselves to the cold breezes of the evening, are exposed to various weak and dangerous diseases.



usually feel their effects; as do those who indulge themselves in eating great quantities of fruit, and drinking pernicious liquors to excess. The country is subject to hurricanes, as well as the Caribbee islands; but these do not happen every year.

This province is now divided into North and South Carolina, and the country known by the name of Georgia, is also within the original limits of this colony, but at present, we shall only concern ourselves with the two first mentioned provinces, and shall treat of the last in its proper place.

North Carolina is bounded by Virginia on the north; by the ocean on the east; by a line drawn in 34° from the ocean to the mountains, on the south; and by that part of Florida possessed by the Indians, on the west; and is subdivided into 14 townships or parishes.

South Carolina is divided from North Carolina by the above imaginary line, on the north; by the ocean on the east; by the river Savannah, which separates itself from Georgia, on the south; and by the country of the Indians on the west; being divided into 14 parishes or townships. But the chief, and almost the only town, in both Carolinas is Charles-town, situated in 32°. 45. north latitude, on the point of the peninsula formed by Athley and Cooper rivers; the former of which is navigable for ships 20 miles above the town, and for boats and large canoes near 40 miles farther; the other river is not navigable for ships so far; but for boats, much farther. The harbour is secured by Johnson's fort, which has 20 guns level with the water. The town some years ago

contained

contained  
ber is by  
they are g  
most of th  
and spac  
here one o  
America  
extend ab  
The to  
of Port R  
miles for  
tinent fo  
of conta  
This nla  
vignable  
great ca  
where la  
shore.  
threefo  
for its a  
be one  
ready th  
There i  
about 5  
to whic  
Town.  
As to  
trees a  
be will  
berry  
trees,  
peale,  
indigo.  
cause

contained upwards of 600 houses; but their number is by this time probably much encreased; they are generally well built of brick or timber, most of them are slated, and formed into regular and spacious streets, and the inhabitants have here one of the most magnificent churches in all America, it having three ayles, galleries which extend all round, and an organ.

The town of Beaufort is situated on the island of Port Royal, in  $31^{\circ} 46'$  north latitude and 100 miles south of Charles Town, the island and continent forming a fine capacious harbour, capable of containing the whole royal navy of England. This island consists of near 1000 acres, and is navigable all round for boats and pinnaces, or great canoes, and one half of it for shipping, where large vessels may load and unload from the shore. But there are said to be not much about threescore houses in the town of Beaufort, though for its advantageous situation, it will probably be one day the capital of Carolina, as it is already the station for the British fleet in those seas. There is another port town erected at Wingaw, about 50 miles to the northward of Charles Town, to which they have given the name of George Town.

As to the produce of the country, all sorts of trees and plants will grow there, as well as can be sown, particularly citron trees; white mulberry trees, for feeding of silk worms; orange trees, olives, vines, rice, wheat, barley, oats, pease, beans, hemp, flax, cotton, tobacco and indigo. The lands are not difficult to clear, because there are neither stones nor brambles; but

only

only great trees which do not grow very thick, so that more land may be cleared there in one week, than could be done in Europe in a month. It is customary in the country to cut down these great trees, and to leave the stumps four or five years to rot, after which they root them up, in order to manure the land. The ground is indeed sandy, but this sand is impragnated with a salt or mire, which renders it very fruitful, so that there are a great number of plantations that have been continually cultivated for 70 years, which yet produce great crops, without ever being manured; for they never lay any dung on the ground.

Silk worms in Carolina are hatched from the egg about the middle of March; at the same time that the mulberry leaves, which are their food, begin to open; being attended and fed six weeks, they eat no more, but have small bushes set up for them to spin themselves into balls, that are thrown into warm water and wound off into raw silk.

Turpentine, resin, tar and pitch are all produced from a sort of pine tree. Turpentine is cut in the standing green trees, several channels that meet at the foot of the tree, where a receiver is placed. These channels are cut as high as a person can reach with an ax, and the bark is peeled off from all those parts of the trunk that are exposed to the sun, that its heat may the more easily force out the turpentine which flows into the receiver. This turpentine being boiled in kettles becomes resin.

Tar is made by preparing a circular floor of clay, declining towards the center, from which

is laid slop  
about ten f  
der the end  
placed to r  
floor is bu  
pieces, and  
which cove  
where the  
gins, to bur  
there being  
to force the  
center of t  
they please  
and letting

think prop  
large from  
in round c

Black c  
first settin  
ago, it was  
to have th  
people hav

for a man  
foreff, and  
pastures fe  
suckle the  
that go d  
roots, but  
thing give  
the event  
find a goo

The tra  
that above  
laden wit

is laid sloping a wooden pipe, which reaches about ten feet without the circumference. Under the end, the earth is dug away, and barrels placed to receive the tar as it runs. Upon the floor is built a pile of dry pine wood, split in pieces, and surrounded with a wall of earth, which covers it all over, except a little at the top, where the fire is first kindled: after the fire begins to burn they also cover the top, to prevent there being any flame, and only a sufficient heat to force the tar downwards into the pipe in the center of the floor. This heat they temper as they please, by thrusting a stick through the earth, and letting in the air at as many places as they think proper. Pitch is made by boiling tar in large iron kettles set in furnaces, or by burning it in round clay holes made in the earth.

Black cattle have greatly increased since the first settling of the colony, for about 50 years ago, it was reckoned very extraordinary for a man to have three or four cows, though now some people have 1000 head, and it is very common for a man to have 200. The cows graze in the forest, and the calves being separated and kept in pastures fenced in, they return home at night to suckle them. Here are also abundance of hogs, that go daily to feed in the woods, on nuts and roots, but having a shelter at home, and something given them to eat, they generally return in the evening. The beef and pork produced here, find a good market in the sugar islands.

The trade of Carolina is now so considerable, that above 200 ships annually sail from thence laden with merchandize of the growth of the country.

198 The Discoveries of the ENGLISH  
country, and it appears from the custom house  
entries, at Charles Town, so long ago as from  
March 1730 to March 1731, that they exported  
in that year 41,957 barrels of rice; about 500  
pounds weight per barrel; 10,750 barrels of pitch;  
2063 of tar; and 759 of turpentine; 300 casks  
of deer skins, containing 8 or 900 each; besides  
a vast quantity of Indian corn, pease, and beans,  
beef, pork, and other salted flesh; beans, plank  
and timber for building, as oak, walnut, pine,  
cedar and cypress, and they now export great  
quantities of indigo.

They carry on a great trade with the Indians,  
from whom they procure vast quantities of skins,  
in exchange for which they give them powder,  
and shot, coarse cloth, vermilion, iron, strong  
liquors, and some other goods, by which they  
have a very considerable profit, and to assist them  
in cultivating the ground they have above 40,000  
negroes.

CHAPTER

1731  
An account of  
tion of the  
bitants  
THE  
English, wa  
have a doub  
quest. The  
Cabot, and  
country was  
of Virginia  
famous Na  
that has fir  
country, w  
authority.  
At length  
fake of relig  
the Dutch  
ver, climat  
in order to  
being bribe  
farther to t  
first plante  
Two or  
Argall had  
to prevent  
king Jame  
cottages, a  
sistence, p  
venience o  
water and

## C H A P. XIX.

*An account of the settlement of New York; a description of that Province; and the trade of its inhabitants.*

**T**HE next colony in America settled by the English, was that of New York, to which we have a double right, that of discovery and conquest. The coast was first viewed by Sebastian Cabot, and in the reign of queen Elizabeth, that country was considered as a part of the province of Virginia. Afterwards in the year 1608, the famous Navigator Hudson, discovered the river, that has since borne his name, and the adjacent country, which he afterwards, without any legal authority, sold to the Dutch, who planted there. At length some English dissenters, who for the sake of religious liberty, fled to Holland, hearing the Dutch give an inviting description of the river, climate, and soil of this country, embarked in order to sail thither; but the master of the ship being bribed by the Dutch, obliged them to land farther to the northward, where they became the first planters of New England.

Two or three years before this, sir Samuel Argall had destroyed the Dutch plantations, when to prevent the like for the future, they applied to king James for his licence to stay there, to build cottages, and to plant for traffic, as well as subsistence, pretending that it was only for the conveniency of their ships, touching there for fresh water and provisions, in their voyage to Brasil;

but

but by little and little they extended their limits, built towns, fortified them, became a flourishing colony, and called the country Nova Belgia.

The Dutch colonies were in this thriving condition at the opening of the first Dutch war in king Charles the second's reign, when they were attacked by the English in 1644, by sir Robert Carr, who was sent to take possession of this plantation. He took with him between 2 or 3000 men, and offering protection to such of the inhabitants as submitted, became master of the whole country without a blow. After which his majesty gave leave to such of the inhabitants as were inclined to it, to stay, and suffered the rest to depart freely with their effects. The number of the latter was but very inconsiderable in comparison of the former. Col. Nichols was left governor of the province and continued so 20 years, in which time he brought the people not only to remain, but to be in love with the English government; so that there never was the least disturbance among the inhabitants, on account of their being subjects to England.

The duke of York granted away part of this province, but the remainder, which is now called New-York, has ever since continued a royal government. This province is bounded by Canada on the north; by New-England on the east; by the Ocean on the south; and by the five Indian nations and Pennsylvania on the west, extending above 200 miles in length from north to south; but it is scarce 60 miles broad in any part. To this must be added the island of Manhattan, upon which the city of New-York is built; Sta-

ten Island and the mouth hended in

This province which produced Hudson's river, Ulster, Chester, Norfolk county in farms, principal bany, and

New-York, latitude, and end of York Hudson's broad. A and contain brick, and serje as scarce any better app several ch of England suasion; fuges; a house, an bles and

This with com ploys, long and fishes

As New tier garn

ten Island and Long Island, all which lie before the mouth of Hudson's river, and are comprehended in New York proper.

This province is divided into ten counties, which proceeding from north to south, down Hudson's river, lie in the following order: Albany, Ulster, Dutchess, Orange, King's county, Chester, New-York county, Queen's county, Suffolk county, and Richmond county, which abound in farms, but have not many great towns; the principal are New-York city, Schenectida, Albany, and West Chester.

New-York city is situated in  $40^{\circ} 46'$  north latitude, and  $47^{\circ} 40'$  west longitude, at the south end of York county, in an island at the mouth of Hudson's river, about 14 miles long and three broad. As this city stands upon an eminence, and contains about 1000 houses well built with brick and stone, and has a wall and forts that serve as well for ornament as defence, there is scarce any town in North America that makes a better appearance. The public buildings are the several churches, belonging to those of the church of England; to the Swedes of the Lutheran persuasion; to the Dutch Calvinists, the French refugees; and the English dissenters; the town house, and the edifice where their general assemblies and courts of justice are held.

This city has an excellent harbour furnished with commodious keys and warehouses, and employs some hundreds of vessels in its foreign trade and fisheries.

As New-York may be considered as the frontier garrison in the south, against an invasion from

from



from any maritime power; so Schenedicta town and fort, in the county of Albany, 20 miles north of the town of Albany, may be deemed the frontier on the north against the French of Canada and their Indian allies, who in the year 1688 surprized and almost demolished the town, with the works about it; but they have since been repaired and enlarged, and Fort Nicholson, and some others have been erected. Albany is a considerable town in Hudson's River, 150 miles north of New York city, and has a fort erected for its defence. Here the sachems or kings of the five nations meet the governors of our northern colonies, to renew their alliances, and concert measures for their defence, against the common enemy.

South-west of the island and county of New York lies Staten Island, which is about ten miles in length, and six in breadth, and has a great many good farms and plantations.

Long Island lies east of Staten Island, and south-east of that of New York, opposite to the colony of Connecticut: It is 150 miles in length, and generally about 12 in breadth, containing three of the counties above-mentioned, viz. Queen's county; Suffolk county, and Richmond county. The chief towns in Queen's county are Jamaica and Hempstead; in Suffolk county, the chief town is Oyster bay; and in the last there is not only the town of Richmond, which gives its name to that county, but Southampton, North-Castle, and New Windsor.

There is a celebrated plain in the midst of Long Island 16 miles long and four broad, to which they

they have from its ha Plain in E of horses i season, to and New-market. ty of Wel mouth of are West. The tra is very co beef, pork onions, bo receive in coffee, & our trade staves and back with the winter the people tures of t gether, J and silver pla in th 150,000. His M fol, app secretary several to

they have given the name of Salisbury-Plain, from its having as fine a turf as that of Salisbury-Plain in England. As there is an excellent breed of horses in the island, they have races here every season, to which the gentlemen of New-England and New-York resort, as people do here to New-market. There are other good towns in the county of West Chester on the continent, east of the mouth of Hudson's River. The chief of which are West Chester and Rye.

The trade from New York to the sugar islands is very considerable, and consist in corn, flour, beef, pork, peas, bacon, smoked beef, apples, onions, boards, and pipe staves: for which they receive in return, sugar, molasses, rum, ginger, coffee, &c. They also drive a very advantageous trade with Madeira and the Azores in pipe staves and fish, for which they load their ships back with wine and brandy. It is affirmed that the winters being pretty severe in this country, the people take off more of the woollen manufactures of this kingdom, than all the islands put together, Jamaica excepted, and return more gold and silver to pay for them. The number of people in this province are said to amount to above 150,000.

His Majesty who is absolute sovereign of the soil, appoints a governor, lieutenant governor, secretary and council; but the freeholders of the several counties, elect their own representatives.

## C H A P. XX.

*An account of the settlement of the East and West Jerseys, and of the produce and trade of those provinces.*

**T**HE countries now called the Jerseys, fell under the dominion of the crown of Great Britain, by the conquest of Nova Belgia or New-York, of which they were a part. The several voyages that had been made for the planting of Virginia rendered these coasts very well known to multitudes of English seamen, who being dispersed into different parts of the world, carried the news of these rich and pleasant countries in America along with them, wherever they went, and this inspired strangers with a strong desire of possessing what we seemed to neglect.

The first Europeans who settled here were the Swedes, who had three towns in this province, Christina, called by the Indians, Andastaka, Ellsborough, and Gottemborough. Their settlements were chiefly on the south side of the river towards Pennsylvania, opposite to which there is a place still called Fort Ellsborough. The Swedes however made but little progress in their plantation, while the Dutch being always industrious in promoting their own advantage, worked them so far out of it, that Bergen, the northern part of New Jersey was almost entirely new planted by Hollanders. At length king Charles II. gave this tract in his grant of Nova Belgia to the duke of

York,

York, but till severer of that plantation

The d vince, un lord Ber their assi when Ea falling to of Jerse thence, on Penn was agro whole.

This e has the r ver Dela nia, on t It lies b extends breadth best inha which e part of titude, a divided that exte south br gen cour north sic mouth c rains the Burlington

York, but the English made no settlement in it till several years after they were in the possession of that province, and had much extended their plantations.

The duke of York having invested this province, under the name of Nova Caneria, in John lord Berkley, and sir George Carteret, they, or their assignees, agreed to divide it into two parts, when East Jersey, which borders on New York, falling to sir George, whose family was of the isle of Jersey, this province took its name from thence, and West New Jersey, which borders on Pennsylvania, falling to the lord Berkeley, it was agreed to give the name of that island to the whole.

This entire province containing the two Jerseys, has the main ocean on the south and east; the river Delawar, which separates it from Pennsylvania, on the west; and Hudson's river on the north. It lies between 39 and 40° north latitude, and extends in length above 120 miles, and 60 in breadth from north to south. The largest and best inhabited part of this province is East Jersey, which extends from Little-egg harbour, to that part of Hudson's river, which is in 41° north latitude, and to the southward and westward was divided from West Jersey by a line of partition, that extends in length from Egg harbour to the south branch of Raritan river, and contains Bergen county, Essex county, and Middlesex, on the north side of the last mentioned river, and Monmouth county on the south. West Jersey contains the same number of counties, and these are Burlington, Gloucester, Salem, and Cape May.

N

These

The two provinces were for a considerable time in the hands of different proprietors; but at length on the 22d of April 1702, these proprietors made an assignment of their rights to Queen Anne; and ever since that time, they have constituted but one royal government, the king appointing the governor and council, and the freemen choosing the representative body of the commons. Sometimes indeed the governor of New-York is also governor of the Jerseys, but this is always by a separate commission.

The chief towns in the Jerseys are, first, Perth Amboy, the capital of the county of Middlesex, pleasantly situated at the mouth of Raritan river, which had it been built according to the intended model, would have been one of the finest towns in North America; but planters have not resorted to it as was expected, though it is so commodiously situated for trade, that ships of 300 tons may come up in one tide and lie before the merchants doors; but Elizabeth's town, which is the capital of the county of Essex, and is situated to the north, flourishes much more, and may still be deemed the most considerable town in the Jerseys. The other principal towns are Bergen, the capital of the county of the same name; Middletown, Shrewsbury, and Freehold in the county of Monmouth; Burlington or Bridlington, the capital of the county of Burlington, and of all West-Jersey: This last town is situated on an island in the river Delawar, to the northward of Philadelphia in Pennsylvania, but on the opposite side of the river: The houses are handsomely built of brick, and laid out into spacious

cious street  
to which  
It has all  
house wh  
held, and  
one called  
Bridge; a  
Philadelph  
ver Salem  
said to be  
whether  
trade.

The so  
are much  
West-Jer  
situation  
ny behav  
to purcha  
have had  
tation, an  
amount  
above 200

The  
grain, an  
visions to  
and skins  
copper, b  
sins for b  
and a new  
of the  
and, sin  
is valued  
and one

considerable  
 tors; but  
 e propri-  
 to Queen  
 re consti-  
 king ap-  
 the free-  
 the com-  
 of New-  
 at this is  
 iled.  
 st, Perth  
 ddlesex,  
 an river,  
 intend-  
 finest  
 ave not  
 it is so  
 s of 300  
 fore the  
 which  
 is situ-  
 re, and  
 e town  
 ans are  
 he same  
 reehold  
 or Brid-  
 ington.  
 is situ-  
 to the  
 but on  
 ses are  
 to spa-  
 cious

ious streets, with commodious keys and wharfs  
 to which ships of 2 or 300 tons may come up.  
 It has also a handsome market place, a town  
 house where the courts of justice were formerly  
 held, and two good bridges over the river, the  
 one called London-Bridge, and the other York-  
 Bridge, and having an easy communication with  
 Philadelphia and the ocean, by means of the ri-  
 ver Salem, which falls into Delaware bay, it is  
 said to be one of the best towns in West-Jersey,  
 whether we consider its situation, buildings or  
 trade.

The soil and conveniences of rivers and creeks  
 are much the same in both Jerseys, except that  
 West-Jersey abounds more in the latter, from its  
 situation on Delaware river. As the English colo-  
 ny behaved with such integrity to the Indians, as  
 to purchase of them the land they planted, they  
 have had the advantage of living without mole-  
 station, and it is computed that the inhabitants  
 amount to about 150,000. But there are not  
 above 200 Indians in this province.

The country produces plenty of all sorts of  
 grain, and the inhabitants, besides carrying pro-  
 visions to the Sugar islands, drive a trade in furs  
 and skins. They also ship off train oil, pitch,  
 copper, black-cattle, fish, corn, and other provi-  
 sions for Portugal, Spain, and the Canaries.

The country of Philadelphia is situated on the  
 banks of the Delaware river, and is one of the  
 most fertile and commodious in the colonies.  
 It is bounded on the north by the city of Phila-  
 delphia, on the east by the bay, on the south by  
 the river, and on the west by the state of New-  
 Jersey. The houses are built on the banks of  
 the river, and are very commodious.

## CHAPTER XXI

*The history of the various Settlements and Revolutions in the Lucayan or Bahama Islands.*

**W** E now come to the settlement of the Lucayan or Bahama Islands, the first part of the new world discovered by Columbus, who arrived first at Guanahani, to which he gave the name of St. Salvador, but the English changed it to that of Cat Island. The Spaniards never thought of settling there, but afterwards contented themselves with cruelly extirpating the native inhabitants, who were at that time remarkable for being the best people in all America: And thus they wantonly murdered many thousands of innocent persons, without any advantage to themselves.

As these islands lie pretty much out of the course of ships bound to the continent of America, it was long before we had any notice of them: But in 1667, Capt. William Sayle being bound to Carolina, was forced by a storm among these islands, and had an opportunity of examining them carefully, particularly a large island to which he gave his own name. But being a second time driven upon it, when bound to the continent, he gave it the name of Providence.

After his return to England, he let the proprietors of Carolina know the situation and circumstances of these islands; observing that in case they were settled, they might not only be of great benefit to this nation, but be a constant check on

the

the French  
with either  
sons being  
jeffy mag  
George d  
John Lo  
George C

The E  
of Cuba,  
south we  
and betw  
island of  
to the rel  
the distan  
continent  
length, b  
and in m  
ever very  
markably  
abounds  
water.

Provid  
hundreds  
in length  
rising ab  
dangerou  
by a tem  
tude, an  
at the g  
profit ma  
arose fro  
wrecked  
to the c  
Bahama

the French and Spaniards, in case of a breach with either, or both of those nations. These reasons being suggested to King Charles II. his majesty made a grant of the Bahama islands, to George duke of Albemarle, Anthony lord Ashley, John Lord Berkeley, William lord Craven, sir George Carteret, and sir Peter Colliton.

The Bahama islands are situated to the north of Cuba, and stretch to the north east from the south west between 21 and 27° of north latitude, and between 73 and 81° of west longitude. The island of Bahama, which communicates its name to the rest, is seated in the latitude of 26°. 36. at the distance of about 20 or 30 leagues from the continent of Florida. It is about 50 miles in length, but scarce any where 60 miles in breadth, and in many places not half so broad. It is however very pleasant and fruitful; the soil is remarkably rich, and the country every where abounds with brooks, and springs of fresh water.

Providence Island, lies in the centre of some hundreds of islands, some of them many miles in length, and others no bigger than small rocks rising above the water; so that it is extremely dangerous for ships to be forced in among them by a tempest. This island lies in 25° north latitude, and is 28 miles long, and 11 miles broad, at the greatest breadth. The most considerable profit made by the planters of Providence island, arose from the misfortunes of such as were shipwrecked, or from those who in a winter voyage to the continent of America were driven to the Bahama islands, and put into Providence for provisions,



visions, which it is true, had little or none but what came from Carolina; however the traders in the island kept store-houses to supply those who wanted, and these afforded great relief to unfortunate mariners.

The first governor who was sent to Providence island by the proprietors was Mr. Chillingworth, who went there about the year 1672, when several people sailed from England, and the other colonies to settle there; but living a licentious life, they grew impatient under government, and Mr. Chillingworth, endeavouring to bring them to reason, they assembled tumultuously, seized him, and shipped him off for Jamaica, after which they lived as they thought proper.

Though such an unruly colony afforded but little encouragement for any man to put himself into their hands, yet six or seven years after, the proprietors made Mr. Clarke governor, whose fate was much worse than that of his predecessors; for the Spaniards, being at that time jealous of every new English colony towards the south, landed in Providence, destroyed all the stock which the inhabitants could not carry off, and burned their houses: but what is still more extraordinary, Mr. Trott, one of Mr. Clarke's successors, always asserted, that the Spaniards roasted Mr. Clarke on a spit, after they had killed him. It is however certain that he was killed, and that the people removing to other colonies, the island remained uninhabited till about the time of the revolution, when several persons removed thither from Europe and the continent, and a new governor was appointed by the proprietors.

About

About  
and the a  
some toba  
and other  
Spaniards  
took the g  
ped the B  
gether w  
ed up th  
the gover  
saving th  
month af  
negroes w  
on the  
thought  
fore rem  
nia, and  
In the m  
Mr. Birc  
Providen  
give him  
but after  
during w  
he return

At len  
ceptacle  
sidering  
they fell  
dressed  
of Provid  
fence:  
lordships  
jesty Kin  
pleased

About ten years after, there were in Providence and the adjacent islands, near 1000 inhabitants; some tobacco was planted, a sugar mill set up, and other improvements made, but in 1708, the Spaniards and French landed, surprized the fort, took the governor prisoner, plundered and stripped the English, burned the town of Nassau, together with the church, ruined the fort and nailed up the guns. After which they carried off the governor and about half the blacks, the rest saving themselves in the woods, but in about a month after they returned, and took most of the negroes who were left. After this second invasion the English inhabitants of the Bahamas thought it in vain to stay any longer, and therefore removed, some to Carolina, some to Virginia, and some to New England, and other places. In the mean time the proprietors appointed one Mr. Birch to go over governor, who landing in Providence and finding it a desert, he did not give himself the trouble to open his commission, but after remaining there two or three months, during which he was forced to sleep in the woods, he returned back, and left the place uninhabited.

At length the Bahama islands, becoming a receptacle for Pyrates, and the house of lords considering that it would be of fatal consequence if they fell into the hands of an enemy, they addressed her Majesty queen Anne, that the island of Providence might be put into a posture of defence: But this advice being neglected, their lordships, four years after, addressed his late Majesty King George the III. upon which he was pleased to give directions for dislodging these Pyrates;

Pirates; for making settlements, and erecting a fortification.

Capt. Woodes Rogers was now appointed governor, and sailed for Providence in April 1718, with a naval force for subduing the Pirates. In the mean time col. Bennett, governor of Bermudas, sent a sloop to the island, ordering them to surrender, pursuant to a late proclamation. Those who were then on the island gladly accepted the mercy offered them, and promised to surrender themselves as soon as they could get a passage to the English colonies; adding, that they did not doubt but their companions who were at sea would gladly follow their example. Accordingly, capt. Henry Jennings, and fifteen others, immediately followed the sloop to Bermudas, and surrendered themselves, and capt. Lassie, capt. Nicholls, capt. Hernigold, and capt. Burgess, surrendered soon after, and 114 of their men. But Vane, one of the captains of the Pirates, knowing that capt. Rogers was coming to reduce those robbers by proclamation, or by force, set fire to a French ship of 22 guns, which he had taken, in order to burn the Rose frigate, which arrived at Nassau: however that frigate got off in time by cutting her cables. But this bold and rash attempt could not have secured him; for soon after there appeared the Milford man of war and another, on board of which was the governor, standing in for the harbour, upon which Vane, and about 50 of his men, made off in a sloop. But though the governor sent a sloop with a sufficient force after them, they made their escape.

Mr. Woodes Rogers landed on the 27th of July, when he took possession of the fort, and caus-

ed

ed his Ma  
fence of th  
ple, who  
had been  
defence,  
or Frenc  
above 100  
were suffi

Mr. Ro  
and to re  
the adven  
council, t  
inhabitan  
as the gov  
about 20  
to them,  
took the  
the great  
who a fe  
persons;  
nies of m  
These co  
the town  
company  
another  
most entr

By the  
part of  
town of  
blished,  
neighbou  
tled, abo  
erected a  
was don

1720

ed his Majesty's commission to be read in the presence of the officers, soldiers, and about 300 people, whom he found there at his arrival; who had been almost daily exercised in arms for their defence, in case of an attack from the Spaniards or French, and capt. Rogers brought with him above 100 soldiers, who being added to the others were sufficient to secure the Bahama Islands.

Mr. Rogers began to regulate the government, and to reduce it to order. He nominated six of the adventurers who came with him to be of the council, to which he added six out of such of the inhabitants as had never been Pyrates. As soon as the governor and council had settled the board, about 200 of the Pyrates surrendered themselves to them, had certificates of their surrender, and took the oaths of allegiance, as did voluntarily the greatest part of the inhabitants of Providence, who a few years after were computed at 1500 persons; out of these were formed three companies of militia under officers of their own island. These companies took their turn every night in the town guard at Nassau. The independent company was always upon duty in the fort, and another of eight guns was erected at the easternmost entrance into the harbour.

By these methods the face of affairs in this part of the world was entirely changed. The town of Nassau was rebuilt, a regular force established, and plantations laid out. Soon after the neighbouring islands of Eleuthera was also settled, about 60 families fixing themselves there, erected a small fort for their defence. The like was done in Harbour Island, where the plantations

214. The Discoveries of the ENGLISH, &c.  
on soon grew more considerable, and a large  
fort was built for the protection of the inhabi-  
tants.

At length Mr. Rogers returning to England,  
was succeeded in his government by capt. Fitz  
Williams, and ever since this last settlement of  
these islands, they have been continually improv-  
ing, though they advance but slowly.

The first settlement was made in the year 1672, by  
Mr. Rogers, who was accompanied by several  
Englishmen, and a number of Indians. They  
found the country fertile, and well watered,  
and the people industrious and friendly.  
The settlement was at first small, but  
soon increased, and the people became  
more civilized. The Indians were  
taught to plant sugar, and to  
make rum, and to use iron tools.  
The settlement was at first called  
St. John's, but was afterwards  
called St. George's.

**F I N I S.**

The first settlement was made in the year 1672, by  
Mr. Rogers, who was accompanied by several  
Englishmen, and a number of Indians. They  
found the country fertile, and well watered,  
and the people industrious and friendly.  
The settlement was at first small, but  
soon increased, and the people became  
more civilized. The Indians were  
taught to plant sugar, and to  
make rum, and to use iron tools.  
The settlement was at first called  
St. John's, but was afterwards  
called St. George's.

H, &c.  
a large  
inhabi-  
England,  
t. Fitz  
ent of  
impro-

The first part of the book is a history of the  
islands of the West Indies from the discovery  
of them by Columbus to the present time.

At length Mr. Rogers returns to the  
was founded in his government by Capt. *John*  
Williams, and ever since that settlement  
these islands they have been continually im-  
proving, though they advance but slowly.

TO THE  
READER



